

First, *to receive the Lord Jesus Christ presently*, John i. 12. Secondly, *to receive him in all his offices*, as king, prophet, and priest, Col. ii. 6; Acts v. 31. Thirdly, *To receive him into every room of my soul*; to receive him into my understanding, mind, will, affections, &c. Fourthly, *To receive him upon his own terms*, of denying myself, taking up his cross and following of him wherever he goes, Mat. xvi. 21; Rev. xiv. 4, &c.

Fifthly and lastly, So far as I know my own heart, I do freely consent, 1. *To be really Christ's*; 2. *To be presently Christ's*; 3. *To be wholly Christ's*; 4. *To be only Christ's*; 5. *To be eminently Christ's*; 6. *To be for ever Christ's*, &c.

Certainly that Christian that has and does experience the particulars last mentioned under the second question, that Christian may safely, groundedly, boldly, and comfortably conclude that his faith is a true, justifying, saving faith, the faith of God's elect, and such a faith as clearly evidences a gracious estate, and will never leave his soul short of heaven.

Now how many thousand Christians are there, that have this faith that is here described, which is doubtless a true, justifying, saving faith, that gives a man an interest in the person of Christ, and in all the blessings and benefits that comes by Christ, who yet question whether they have true faith or no, partly from weakness, partly from temptations, and partly from the various definitions that are given of faith by Protestants, both in their preachings and writings; and it is and must be for a lamentation, that in a point of so great moment the trumpet should give such an uncertain sound.

The third question, or case is this, viz., *Whether in the great day of the Lord, the day of general judgment, or in the particular judgment that will pass upon every soul immediately after death, which is the stating of the soul in an eternal estate or condition, either of happiness or misery; whether the sins of the saints, the follies and vanities of believers, the infirmities and enormities of sincere Christians shall be brought into the judgment of discussion and discovery, or no? Whether the Lord will either in the great day of account, or in a man's particular day of account or judgment, publicly manifest, proclaim, and make mention of the sins of his people, or no?* This question is bottomed upon the ten scriptures in the margin,¹ which I desire the Christian reader to consult; and upon the sad and daily complaints of many dear sincere Christians, who frequently cry out, 'Oh, we can never answer for one evil thought of ten thousand, nor we can never answer for one idle word of twenty thousand; nor we can never answer for one evil action of a hundred thousand; and how then shall we stand in judgment? how shall we look the judge in the face? how shall we be ever able to answer for all our omissions, and for all our commissions; for all our sins of ignorance, and sins against light and knowledge; for all our sins against the law, and for all our sins against

¹ Eccles. xi. 9, and xii. 14; Mat. xii. 36, and xviii. 23; Luke xvi. 2; Rom. xiv. 10, 12; 2 Cor. v. 10; Heb. ix. 27, and xiii. 17; 1 Peter iv. 5.

the gospel, and for all our sins against sovereign grace, and for all our sins against the remedy, against the Lord Jesus, and for all the sins of our infancy, of our youth, and of old age? Job. ix. 3; Ps. xix. 12, and clxiii. 2; Ezra xix. 6, &c. What account shall we be able to give up, when we come to our particular day of judgment, immediately after our death, or in the great and general day of account, when angels, devils, and men shall stand before the Lord Jesus, Heb. ix. 27, whom God the Father hath ordained to be the judge of quick and dead, Acts xvii. 31?

Now to this great question I answer, *that the sins of the saints, the infirmities and enormities of believers, shall never be brought into the judgment of discussion and discovery; they shall never be objected against them, either in their particular day of judgment, or in the great day of their account.* Now this truth I shall make good by an induction of particulars; thus,—

[1.] First, *Our Lord Jesus Christ, in his judicial proceedings in the last day, which is set down clearly and largely in Mat. xxv. 34–42, doth only enumerate the good works they have done, but takes not the least notice of the spots and blemishes, of the infirmities or enormities, of the weaknesses or wickednesses, of his people.* God has sealed up the sins of his people, never to be remembered or looked upon more, Deut. xxxii. 4–6; Dan. ix. 24. In the great day the book of God's remembrance shall be opened and publicly read, that all the good things that the saints have done for God, for Christ, for saints, for their own souls, for sinners; and that all the great things that they have suffered for Christ's sake, and the gospel's sake, may be mentioned to their everlasting praise, to their eternal honour. And though the choicest and chiefest saints on earth have, 1. Sin dwelling in them; 2. Operating and working in them; 3. Vexing and molesting of them, being as so many goads in their sides and thorns in their eyes; 4. Captivating and prevailing over them, Rom. vii. 23, 24; Gal. v. 17; yet in that large recital which shall then be read of the saints' lives, Mat. xxv., there is not the least mention made either of sins of omission or commission; nor the least mention made either of great sins or of small sins; nor the least mention made either of sins before conversion or after conversion. Here in this world the best of saints have had their *buts*, their spots, their blots, their specks, as the fairest day hath its clouds, the finest linen its spots, and the richest jewels their specks; but now in the judicial process of this last and universal assizes there is not found in all the books that shall then be opened, so much as one unsavoury 'but' to blemish the fair characters of the saints. Surely he that sees no iniquity in Jacob, nor perverseness in Israel, Num. xxiii. 21, to impute it to them whilst they live, he will never charge iniquity or perverseness upon them in the great day, Rev. xx. 12; Dan. vii. 10. Surely he who has fully satisfied his Father's justice for his people's sins, and who hath by his own blood balanced and made up all reckonings and accounts between God and their souls, he will never charge upon them their faults and follies in the great day. Surely he who hath spoken so much for his saints whilst he was on earth, and who hath continually interceded for them since he went to heaven, John xvii.; Heb. vii. 25; he won't, though

he hath cause to blame them for many things, speak anything against them in the great day. Surely Jesus Christ, the saints' paymaster, who hath discharged their whole debt at once, who hath paid down upon the nail the ten thousand talents which we owed, and took in the bond and nailed it to the cross, Heb. x. 10, 12, 14; Mat. xviii. 24; Col. ii. 14; leaving no back reckonings unpaid, to bring his poor children, which are the travail of his soul, Isa. liii. 11, afterward into any danger from the hands of divine justice; he will never mention the sins of his people, he will never charge the sins of his people upon them in the great day. Our dear Lord Jesus, who is the righteous judge of heaven and earth in the great day of account, he will bring in *omnia bene* in his presentment, all fair and well, and accordingly will make proclamation in that high court of justice, before God, angels, devils, saints, and sinners, &c. Christ will not charge his children with the least unkindness, he will not charge his spouse with the least unfaithfulness in the great day; yea, he will represent them before God, angels, and men, as complete in him, as all fair and spotless, as without spot or wrinkle, as without fault before the throne of God, as holy and unblamable and unprovable in his sight, as immaculate as the angels themselves who kept their first estate, Col. ii. 10; Cant. iv. 7; Eph. v. 27; Rev. xiv. 5. This honour shall have all the saints, and thus shall Christ be glorified in his saints, and admired in all them that believe, 1 Thes. ii. 10. The greatest part of the saints by far will have passed their particular judgment long before the general judgment, Heb. ix. 27, and being therein acquitted and discharged from all their sins by God the Judge of the quick and dead, 2 Tim. iv. 1, and admitted into heaven upon the credit of Christ's blood, righteous satisfaction, and their free and full justification, it cannot be imagined that Jesus Christ, in the great day, will bring in any new charge against his children when they have been cleared and absolved already. Certainly when once the saints are freely and fully absolved from all their sins by a divine sentence, then their sins shall never be remembered, they shall never be objected against them any more; for one divine sentence cannot cross and rescind another. The Judge of all the world had long since cast all their sins behind his back, Isa. xxxviii. 17; and will he now set them before his face, and before the faces of all the world? Surely no. He has long since cast all their sins into the depths of the sea, Micah vii. 19,—bottomless depths of everlasting oblivion—that they might never be buoyed up any more! He has not only forgiven their sins, but he has also forgotten their sins, Jer. xxxi. 34; and will he remember them and declare them in the great day? Surely no. God has long since blotted out the transgressions of his people, Isa. xliii. 25. This metaphor is taken from creditors, who, when they purpose never to exact a debt, will blot it out of their books. Now after that a debt is struck out of a bill, bond, or book, it cannot be exacted, the evidence cannot be pleaded. Christ having crossed the debt-book with the red lines of his blood, Col. ii. 14; if now he should call the sins of his people to remembrance, and charge them upon them, he should cross the great design of his cross. Upon this foundation stands the absolute impossibility that any sin, that the

least sin, yea, that the least circumstance of sin, or the least aggravation of sin, should be so much as mentioned by the righteous Judge of heaven and earth in the process of that judicial trial in the great day, except it be in a way of absolution in order to the magnifying of their pardon. God has long since blotted out as a thick cloud the transgressions of his people, and as a cloud their sins, Isa. xlv. 22. Now we know that the clouds which are driven away by the winds appear no more; nor the mist which is dried by the sun appears no more; other clouds and other mists may arise, but not they which are driven away and dried up. Thus the sins of the saints being forgiven, they shall no more return upon them, they shall never more be objected against them.

[2.] Further, *The Lord saith, 'Though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool,'* Isa. i. 18. Pardon makes such a clear riddance of sin, that it is as if it had never been. The scarlet sinner is as white as snow, snow newly fallen from the sky, which was never sullied. The crimson sinner is as wool, wool which never received the least tincture in the dye-fat. You know scarlet and crimson are double and deep dyes, dyes in grain; yet if the cloth dyed therewith be as the wool before it was dyed, and if it be as white as snow, what is become of those dyes? Are they any more? Is not the cloth as if it had not been dyed at all? Even so; though our sins, by reiterating them, by long lying in them, have made deep impressions upon us, yet, by God's discharge of them, we are as if we had never committed them.

[3.] Again, *The psalmist pronounceth him 'blessed whose sin is covered,'* Ps. xxxii. 1. A thing covered is not seen; so sin forgiven is before God as not seen. The same psalmist pronounceth him 'blessed to whom the Lord imputeth not sin,' Ps. xxxii. 2.

Now a sin not imputed is as not committed. The prophet Jeremiah tells us that 'the iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, and there shall be none; and the sins of Judah, and they shall not be found,' Jer. i. 20. Now is not that fully discharged which shall never be found, never appear, never be remembered, never be mentioned?

Thus, by the many metaphors used in Scripture to set out forgiveness of sin, pardon of sin, you plainly and evidently see that God's discharge is free and full, and therefore he will never charge their sins upon them in the great day, Jer. xxxi. 34; Ezek. xviii. 22. But

Some may object and say, *That the Scripture saith, that 'God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil,'* Eccles. xii. 14. How then can this be, that the sins of the saints shall not be mentioned, nor charged upon them in the great day?

I answer, *This scripture is to be understood respectivè, &c.,* with a just respect to the two great parties which are to be judged, Mat. xxv. 32, 33. Sheep and goats, saints and sinners, sons and slaves, elect and reprobate, holy and profane, pious and impious, faithful and unfaithful; that is to say, all the grace, the holiness, the godliness, the good of those that are good, shall be brought into the judgment of

mercy, that it may be freely, graciously, and nobly rewarded, and all the wickedness of the wicked shall be brought into the judgment of condemnation, that it may be righteously and everlastingly punished in this great day of the Lord. All sincerity shall be discovered and rewarded; and all hypocrisy shall be disclosed and revenged. In this great day all the works of the saints shall follow them into heaven; and in this great day all the evil works of the wicked shall hunt and pursue them into hell.¹ In this great day all the hearts, thoughts, secrets, words, ways, works, and walkings of wicked men shall be discovered and laid open before all the world, to their everlasting shame and sorrow, to their eternal amazement and astonishment. And in this great day the Lord will make mention, in the ears of all the world, of every prayer that the saints have made, and of every sermon that they have heard, and of every tear that they have shed, and of every fast that they have kept, and of every sigh and groan that ever they have fetched, and of all the good words that ever they have spoke, and of all the good works that ever they have done, and of all the great things that ever they have suffered; yea, in this great day they shall reap the fruit of many good services which themselves had forgot. 'Lord, when saw we thee hungry, and fed thee; or thirsty, and gave thee drink; or naked, and clothed thee; or sick or in prison, and visited thee?' Mat. xxv. 34-41. They had done many good works, and forgot them; but Christ records them, remembers them, and rewards them before all the world. In this great day a bit of bread, a cup of cold water shall not pass without a reward, Eccles. xi. 1, 6. In this great day the saints shall reap a plentiful and glorious crop, as the fruit of that good seed, that for a time hath seemed to be buried and lost. In this great day of the Lord the saints shall find that bread which long before was cast upon the waters. But my

Second reason is taken from *Christ's vehement protestations, that they shall not come into judgment*: John v. 24, 'Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but is passed from death unto life.'² Those words, 'shall not come into condemnation,' are not rightly translated. The original is εἰς κρίσιν, 'shall not come into judgment,' not into damnation, as you read it in all your English books. I will not say what should put men upon this exposition rather than a true translation of the original word. Further, it is very observable that no evangelist useth this double asseveration but St John, and he never useth it but in matters of greatest weight and importance, and to show the earnestness of his spirit, and to stir us up to better attention, and to put the thing asserted out of all question and beyond all contradiction; as when we would put a thing for ever out of all question, we do it by a double asseveration—verily, verily, it is so, &c., John i. 51, iii. 3, 11, and vi. 26, 32, 47, 53, &c.

Thirdly, Because his not bringing their sins into judgment *doth most and best agree with many precious and glorious expressions*

¹ See Wisdom, c. ii. throughout, and chap. v., from the first verse to the tenth.

² Vide Aquin. 87; Suppl. est. in l. 4; Ser. dist., 47.

that we find scattered, as so many shining, sparkling pearls, up and down in Scripture; as,

First, With those of God's blotting out the sins of his people: 'I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for my own sake, and will not remember thy sins. I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins,' Isa. xliii. 25, and xliv. 22.

Who is this that blots out transgressions? He that hath the keys of heaven and hell at his girdle; that opens, and no man shuts; that shuts, and no man opens; he that hath the power of life and death, of condemning and absolving, of killing and making alive; he it is that blotteth out transgressions. If an under officer should blot out an indictment, that perhaps might do a man no good; a man might, for all that, be at last cast by the judge; but when the judge or king shall blot out the indictment with their own hand, then the indictment cannot return. Now this is every believer's case and happiness.

Secondly, To those glorious expressions of God's not remembering of their sins any more, Jer. xxxi. 34; Isa. xliii. 25. 'And I will not remember thy sins: and they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know ye the Lord, for they shall all know me, from the least of them to the greatest of them, saith the Lord, for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.' So the apostle, 'For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more,' Heb. viii. 12.

And again, the same apostle saith, 'This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them, and their sins and iniquities will I remember no more,' Heb. x. 17.¹

The meaning is, their iniquities shall be quite forgotten: I will never mention them more, I will never take notice of them more, they shall never hear more of them from me. Though God hath an iron memory to remember the sins of the wicked, yet he hath no memory to remember the sins of the righteous.

Thirdly, His not bringing their sins into judgment doth most and best agree with those blessed expressions of his casting their sins into the depth of the sea, and of his casting them behind his back. 'He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us, he will subdue our iniquities, and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea,' Mic. vii. 19. Where sin is once pardoned, the remission stands never to be repealed. Pardoned sin shall never come in account against the pardoned man before God any more; for so much doth this borrowed speech import. If a thing were cast into a river, it might be brought up again; or if it were cast upon the sea, it might be discerned and taken up again; but when it is cast into the depths, the bottom of the sea, it can never be buoyed up again.

By the metaphor in the text, the Lord would have us to know that sins pardoned shall rise no more, they shall never be seen

¹ That which Cicero said flatteringly of Cæsar, is truly affirmed of God, *Nihil oblivisci solet præter injurias*, he forgetteth nothing but the wrongs that daily are done him by his.

more, they shall never come on the account more. He will so drown their sins that they shall never come up before him the second time.

And so much that other scripture imports, 'Behold, for peace I had great bitterness; but thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption; for thou hast cast all my sins behind thy back,' Isa. xxxviii. 17. These last words are a borrowed speech, taken from the manner of men, who are wont to cast behind their backs such things as they have no mind to see, regard, or remember. A gracious soul hath always his sins before his face, 'I acknowledge my transgressions, and my sin is ever before me,' Ps. li. 3, and therefore no wonder if the Lord cast them behind his back. The father soon forgets, and casts behind his back those faults that the child remembers, and hath always in his eyes; so doth the Father of spirits.

Fourthly, His not bringing their sins into judgment doth best agree with that *sweet and choice expression of God's pardoning the sins of his people*.

'And I will cleanse them from all their iniquity, whereby they have sinned against me; and I will pardon all their iniquities, whereby they have sinned, and whereby they have transgressed against me,' Jer. xxxiii. 8. So in Micah, 'Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgressions of the remnant of his heritage?'—as though he would not see it, but wink at it—'he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy,' Mic. vii. 18. The Hebrew word—*nase* from *nasa*—that is here rendered *pardoneth*, signifies a taking away. When God pardons sin, he takes it sheer away; that if it should be sought for, yet it could not be found, as the prophet speaks, Jer. l. 20, 'In those days, and in that time, saith the Lord, the iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, and there shall be none; and the sins of Judah, and they shall not be found, for I will pardon them whom I reserve;' and these words, 'and passeth by,' in the afore-cited seventh of Micah and the 18th verse, according to the Hebrew *Vignober Gnal* is, 'and passeth over,' 'God passeth over the transgression of his heritage,' that is, he takes no notice of it; as a man in a deep muse, or as one that hath haste of business, seeth not things before him, his mind being busied about other matters, he neglects all to mind his business.

As David, when he saw in Mephibosheth the feature of his friend Jonathan, took no notice of his lameness, or any other defect or deformity; so God, beholding in his people the glorious image of his Son, winks at all their faults and deformities, Isa. xl. 1, 2, which made Luther say, 'Do with me what thou wilt, since thou hast pardoned my sin;' and what is it to pardon sin, but not to mention sin?

Fifthly, His not bringing their sins into the judgment of discussion and discovery doth best agree to those *expressions of forgiving and covering*, 'Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered,' Ps. xxxii. 1. In the original, it is in the plural, blessednesses; so here is a plurality of blessings, a chain of pearls.

The like expression you have in the 85th Psalm and the 2d verse, 'Thou hast forgiven the iniquity of thy people, thou hast

covered all their sin. Selah.' For the understanding of these scriptures aright, take notice that to cover is a metaphorical expression. Covering is such an action which is opposed to disclosure; to be covered, it is to be so hid and closed as not to appear.¹ Some make the metaphor from filthy loathsome objects which are covered from our eyes as dead carcasses are buried under the ground; some from garments, that are put upon us to cover our nakedness; others from the Egyptians that were drowned in the Red Sea, and so covered with water; others from a great gulf in the earth, that is filled up and covered with earth injected into it; and others make it, in the last place, an allusive expression to the mercy-seat, over which was a covering.

Now all these metaphors in the general tend to shew this, that the Lord will not look, he will not see, he will not take notice of the sins he hath pardoned, to call them any more to a judicial account.

As when a prince reads over many treasons and rebellions, and meets with such and such which he hath pardoned, he reads on, he passeth by, he taketh no notice of them, the pardoned person shall never hear more of them, he will never call him to account for those sins more; so here, &c. When Caesar was painted, he puts his finger upon his scar, his wart. God puts his fingers upon all his people's scars and warts, upon all their weaknesses and infirmities, that nothing can be seen but what is fair and lovely: 'Thou art all fair, my love, and there is no spot in thee,' Cant. iv. 7.

Sixthly, It best agrees to that expression of *not imputing of sin*. 'Blessed is the man to whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile,' Ps. xxxii. 2. So the apostle in that Rom. iv. 6-8. Now not to impute iniquity, is not to charge iniquity, not to set iniquity upon his score who is blessed and pardoned, &c.

Seventhly, and lastly, It best agrees with that expression that you have in the 113th Psalm and the 11th and 12th verses, 'For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy towards them that fear him; as far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.' What a vast distance is there betwixt the east and west! of all visible latitudes, this is the greatest; and thus much for the third argument. The

[4.] Fourth argument that prevails with me to judge that Jesus Christ will not bring the sins of the saints into the judgment of discussion and discovery in the great day is, because *it seems unsuitable to three considerable things for Jesus Christ to proclaim the infirmities and miscarriages of his people to all the world*.

First, It seems to be unsuitable to the glory and solemnity of that day, which to the saints will be a day of refreshing, a day of restitution, a day of redemption, a day of coronation, as hath been already proved. Now how suitable to this great day of solemnity the proclamation of the saints' sins will be, I leave the reader to judge.

Secondly, It seems unsuitable to all those near and dear relations that Jesus Christ stands in towards his. He stands in the relation of

¹ Sic velantur, ut in judicio non revelentur.

a Father, a Brother, a Head, a Husband, a Friend, an Advocate.¹ Now, are not all these by the law of relation, bound rather to hide, and keep secret, at least from the world, the weaknesses, and infirmities of their near and dear relations; and is not Christ, is not Christ much more, by how much he is more a Father, a Brother, a Head, a Husband, &c., in a spiritual way, than any others can be in a natural way? &c.

Thirdly, It seems very unsuitable to what the Lord Jesus requires of his in this world. The Lord requires that his people should cast a mantle of love, of wisdom, of silence, and secrecy over one another's weaknesses and infirmities, &c.

Hatred stirreth up strifes, but love covereth all sins—love's mantle is very large. Love will find a hand, a plaster to clap upon every sore, Prov. x. 12, and 1 Pet. iv. 8. Flavius Vespasianus, the emperor, was very ready to conceal his friends' vices, and as ready to reveal their virtues. So is divine love in the hearts of the saints, 'If thy brother offend thee, go and tell him his fault between him and thee alone; if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother,' Mat. xviii. 15. As the pills of reprehension are to be gilded and sugared over with much gentleness and softness, so they are to be given in secret. Tell him between him and thee alone. Tale-bearers and tale-hearers are alike abominable. Heaven is too hot, and too holy a place for them, Ps. xv. 3. Now will Jesus Christ have us carry it thus towards offending Christians, and will he himself act otherwise? Nay, is it an evil in us to lay open the weaknesses and infirmities of the saints to the world? and will it be an excellency, a glory, a virtue in Christ, to do it in the great day? &c.

[5.] A fifth argument is this, *It is the glory of a man to pass over a transgression*. 'The discretion of a man deferreth his anger, and it is his glory to pass over a transgression,' Prov. xix. 11. Or to pass by it, as we do by persons or things we know not, or would take no notice of. Now, 'Is it the glory of a man to pass over a transgression?' and will it not much more be the glory of Christ, silently to pass over the transgressions of his people in that great day?² The greater the treasons and rebellions are that a prince passes over, and takes no notice of, the more is his honour and glory; and so doubtless it will be Christ's in that great day, to pass over all the treasons and rebellions of his people, to take no notice of them, to forget them as well as to forgive them.

The heathens have long since observed, that in nothing man came nearer to the glory and perfection of God himself than in goodness and clemency. Surely, if it be such an honour to man, 'to pass over a transgression,' it cannot be a dishonour to Christ, to pass over the transgressions of his people, he having already buried them in the sea of his blood. Again, saith Solomon, 'It is the glory of God to conceal a thing,' Prov. xxv. 2. And why it should not make for the glory of divine love, to conceal the sins of the saints in that great day, I know not. And whether the concealing the sins of the saints in the great day, will not make most for their joy and wicked men's sorrows, for

¹ Isa. ix. 6; Heb. ii. 11, 12; Eph. i. 21, 22; Rev. xix. 7; John xv. 1; ii. 1, 2.

² *Non amo quinquam nisi offendam*, said a heathen.

their comfort and wicked men's terror and torment, I will leave you to judge, and time and experience to decide; and thus much for the resolution of that great question.

I. Now, from what has been said, in answer to this third question, a sincere Christian may form up this first plea as to the ten scriptures in the margin,¹ that refer either to the general judgment, or to the particular judgment that will pass upon every Christian immediately after death. *O blessed God, Jesus Christ has by his own blood balanced and made up all reckonings and accounts that were between thee and me; and thou hast vehemently protested, that thou wilt not bring me into judgment; that thou wilt blot out my transgressions as a thick cloud, and that thou wilt remember my sins no more; and that thou wilt cast them behind thy back, and hurl them into the depth of the sea; and that thou wilt forgive them, and cover them, and not impute them to me, &c.* This is my plea, O Lord, and by this plea I shall stand. Well, saith the Judge of quick and dead, 'I own this plea, I accept of this plea, I have nothing to say against this plea; the plea is just, safe, honourable, and righteous, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.'

Secondly, Every sinner at his first believing and closing with Christ, *is justified in the court of glory from all his sins, both guilt and punishment*, Acts xiii. 39. Justification doth not increase or decrease, but all sin is pardoned at the first act of believing. All who are justified are justified alike. There is no difference amongst believers, as to their justification; one is not more justified than another, for every justified person hath a plenary remission of his sins, and the same righteousness of Christ imputed; but in sanctification there is difference amongst believers. Every one is not sanctified alike, for some are stronger and higher, and others are weaker and lower in grace. As soon as any are made believers in Christ, all the sins which they have committed in time past, and all the sins which they are guilty of, as to the time present, they are actually pardoned unto them in general, and in particular, 1 Cor. xii. 12-14; 1 John ii. 1, 12-14. Now, that all the sins of a believer are pardoned at once, and actually unto them, may be thus demonstrated.

[1.] First, *All phrases in Scripture imply thus much*. Isa. xliii. 25, 'I, even I, am he which blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.' Jer. xxxi. 34, 'I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.' Jer. xxxiii. 8, 'And I will pardon all their iniquities whereby they have sinned, and whereby they have transgressed against me.' Ezek. xviii. 22, 'All his transgressions that he hath committed, they shall not be mentioned unto him.' Heb. viii. 12, 'I will be merciful unto their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities I will remember no more;' *ergo*, all is pardoned at once. But,

[2.] Secondly, *That remission of sins that leaves no condemnation to the party offending, is the remission of all sins*; for if there were any sin remaining, a man is still in the state of condemnation; but justification leaves no condemnation. Rom. viii. 1, 'There is no condemna-

¹ Eccles. xi. 9, and xii. 14; Mat. xii. 36, and xviii. 23; Luke xvi. 2; Rom. xiv. 10, 12; 2 Cor. v. 10; Heb. ix. 27, and xiii. 17; 1 Pet. iv. 5.

tion to them that are in Christ Jesus,' and ver. 33, 'Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth;' and ver. 38, 39, 'Nor things present, nor things to come, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord;' and John v. 24, 'He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but is passed from death to life;' *ergo*, all sins are pardoned at once, or else they were in a state of condemnation, &c.¹ Thus you see it evident that there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Jesus. Therefore there is full remission of all sins to the soul at the first act of believing. But,

[3.] Thirdly, *A believer, even when he sinneth, is still united to Christ*, John xv. 1, 6, xvii. 21-23; 1 Cor. vi. 17, 'And he is still clothed with the righteousness of Christ which covers all his sins, and dischargeth him from them, so that no guile can redound to him,' Isa. lxi. 10; Jer. xxiii. 6; 1 Cor. i. 30; Phil. iii. 9, &c. But,

[4.] Fourthly, *A believer is not to fear curse or hell at all*, which yet he might do if all his sins were not pardoned at once; but some of his new sins were for a while unpardoned, &c. But,

[5.] Fifthly, *Our Lord Jesus Christ, by once suffering, suffered for all the sins of the elect, past, present, and to come*. The infinite wrath of God the Father fell on him for all the sins of the chosen of God, Isa. liii. 9; Heb. xii. 14, and x. 9, 10, 12, 14. If Christ had suffered for ten thousand worlds, he could have suffered no more than he did; for he suffered the whole infinite wrath of God the Father. The wrath of God was infinite wrath, and the sufferings of Christ were infinite sufferings; *ergo*, Look, as Adam's sin was enough to infect a thousand worlds, so our Saviour's merits are sufficient to save a thousand worlds. Those sufferings that he suffered for sins past, are sufficient to satisfy for sins present and to come. That all the sins of God's people, in their absolute number, from first to last, were laid upon Christ, who in the days of his sufferings did meritoriously purchase perfect remission of all their sins, to be applied in future times to them, and by them, is most certain, Isa. liv. 5, 6. But,

[6.] Sixthly, *Repentance is not at all required for our justification—where our pardon is only to be found—but only faith*; therefore pardon of sin is not suspended until we repent of our sins. But,

[7.] Seventhly, *If the remission of all sins be not at once, it is either because my faith cannot lay hold on it, or because there is some hindrance in the way: but a man by the hand of faith may lay hold on all the merits of Christ, and the word reveals the pardon of all; and the sacrament of the Lord's Supper seals and confirms the pardon of all*; and there is no danger nor inconvenience that attends this assertion, for it puts the highest obligation imaginable upon the soul, as to fear and obedience: Ps. cxxx. 3, 'If thou, Lord, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand?' ver. 4, 'But there is

¹ At a sinner's first conversion his sins are truly and perfectly pardoned. 1. All as to sin already past; 2. All as to the state of remission. They had a perfect right to the pardon of all their sins, past, present, and to come, though not an equal investiture.

forgiveness with thee, that thou mayest be feared.' Forgiveness makes not a Christian bold with sin, but fearful of sin, and careful to obey, as Christians find in their daily experience. By this argument it appears clear, that the forgiveness of all sins is made to the soul at once, at the first act of believing. But,

[8.] Eighthly, *If new sins were not pardoned until you do repent, then we should be left to an uncertainty whiles our sins be pardoned, or when they will be pardoned;* for it may be long ere we repent, as you see in David, who lay long under the guilt of murder and adultery before he repented, and you know Solomon lay long under many high sins before he repented, &c., and it may be more long ere we do, or can know that we do truly repent of our sins. But,

[9.] Ninthly, *If all sins were not forgiven at once, then justification is not perfect at once, but is more and more increased and perfected as more and more sins are pardoned, which cannot consist with the true doctrine of justification.* Certainly as to the state of justification, there is a full and perfect remission of all sins—considered under the differences of time past, present, and to come. As in the state of condemnation there is not any one sin pardoned, so in the estate of justification, there is not any one sin but is pardoned; for the state of justification is opposite to all condemnation and curse and wrath. But,

[10.] Tenthly, *All agree that as to God's eternal decree or purpose of forgiveness, all the sins of his people are forgiven.* God did not intend to forgive some of their sins and not the rest, but a universal and full and complete forgiveness was fixedly purposed and resolved on by God. Forgiveness of sins is a gracious act, or work of God for Christ's sake, discharging and absolving believing and repenting persons from the guilt and punishment of all their sins, so that God is no longer displeased with them, nor will he ever remember them any more, nor call them to an account for them, nor condemn them for their sins, but will look on them, and deal with them as if they had never sinned, never offended him.

Thirdly; Consider, that at the very moment of a believer's dissolution, all his sins are perfectly and fully forgiven. All their sins are so fully and finally forgiven them, that at the very moment of their souls going out from the body, there is not one sin of omission or commission, nor any aggravation or least circumstance left standing in the book of God's remembrance; and this is the true reason why there shall not be the least mention made of their sins in their trial at Christ's tribunal, because they were all pardoned fully and finally at the hour of their death. All debts were then discharged, all scores were then crossed, so that in the great day, when the books shall be opened and perused, there shall not one sin be found, but all blotted out, and all reckonings made even in the blood of Christ.

Indeed, if God should pardon some sins, and not others, he would at the same time be a friend and an enemy, and we should be at once both happy and miserable, which are manifest contradictions. Besides, God doth nothing in vain; but it would be in vain for God to pardon some sins but not all, for as one leak in a ship un-

stopped will sink the ship, and as one sore or one disease, not healed nor cured, will kill the body, so one sin unpardoned will destroy the soul.

Fourthly, God looks not upon those as sinners, whose sins are pardoned: Luke vii. 37, 'And behold a woman in the city which was a sinner.' A notorious sinner, a branded sinner. Mark, it is not said, behold a woman which is a sinner, but 'behold a woman which *was* a sinner;' to note that sinners converted and pardoned are no longer reputed sinners, 'Behold a woman which was a sinner.' Look, as a man, when he is cleansed from filth, is as if he had never been defiled; so when a sinner is pardoned, he is in God's account as if he had never sinned. Hence those phrases in Cant. 4. 7, 'Thou art all fair, my love, and there is no spot in thee:' Col. ii. 10, 'And ye are complete in him, who is the head of all principality and power,' as though he had said, because in himself he hath the well-head of glory and majesty, the which becometh ours; in that he is also the head of his church: Col. i. 21, 'And you that were sometime alienated, and enemies in your mind, by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled;' ver. 22, 'In the body of his flesh, through death, to present you holy and unblamable, and unreprouvable in his sight;' that is, by his righteousness imputed and imparted: Eph. v. 27, 'that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish.' The word 'present' is taken from the custom of solemnizing a marriage; first the spouse was wooed, and then set before her husband adorned with his jewels, as Rebekah was with Isaac's: Rev. xiv. 5, 'And in their mouth was found no guile, for they are without fault before the throne of God.' 1. They are without fault by imputation. 2. By inchoation. Hence Job is said to be a perfect man, Job ii., and David to be 'a man after God's own heart,' Acts xiii. 22. The forgiven party is now looked upon and received with that love and favour, as if he had never offended God, and as if God had never been offended by him, Hosea xiv. 1, 2, 4; Isa. liv. 7-10; Jer. xxxi. 33, 34, 36, 37; Luke xv. 19-23. Here the sins of the prodigal are pardoned, and his father receives him with such expressions of love and familiarity as if he had never sinned against him; his father never so much as objects any one of all his high sinnings against him. Hence it is that you read of such sweet, kind, tender, loving, comfortable expressions of God towards those whose sins he had pardoned: Jer. xxxi. 16, 'Refrain thy voice from weeping, and thine eyes from tears;' ver. 20, 'Is Ephraim my dear son, is he a pleasant child?' Mat. ix. 2, 'Son, be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee.' The schools say that the remission of sins is not only *ablative mali*, but *collativa boni*, a remotion of guilt, but a collation of good. Look, as he that is legally acquitted of theft or murder, is no more reputed a thief or murderer, so here, Jer. l. 20, 'In those days, and in that time, saith the Lord, the iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, and there shall be none; and the sins of Judah, and they shall not be found; for I will pardon them whom I reserve.' Pardoned sin is in God's account no sin, and the pardoned sinner in God's account is no sinner, as the pardoned debtor is no debtor. Where God hath pardoned a man, there he never looks upon that man

as a sinner, but as a just man. Pardon of sin is an utter abolition of it, as it doth reflect upon the person, making him guilty, and obliging him actually to condemnation; in this respect the pardoned man is as free as if he had never sinned. Therefore the believer, the penitent person, hath infinite cause of rejoicing, that God hath perfectly pardoned his sins, and that he looks upon him no more [as] a sinner, but as a just and righteous person. O sirs! what can the great God do more for your comfort and consolation? and therefore, never entertain any hard thoughts of God, as if he were like those men who say they forgive with all their hearts, and yet retain their secret hate and inward malice as much as ever; but for ever live in the faith of this truth, viz., that when God doth pardon sin, he takes it so away, as that the party acquitted is no more looked upon as a sinner. Now upon this consideration, what a glorious plea hath every sincere Christian to make in the day of account! But,

Fifthly, Forgiveness takes off our obligation to suffer eternal punishment; so that, look, as a forgiven debtor is freed from whatsoever penalty his debt did render him liable to, so is the forgiven sinner from the punishment itself. In this respect Aristotle saith, 'To forgive sin is not to punish it.' And Austin saith, 'To forgive sin is not to inflict the punishment due unto it.' And the schools say, 'To remit the sin is not to impute the punishment.' When a king pardons a thief, his theft now shall not prejudice him. The guilt obliging is that whereby the sinner is actually bound to undergo the punishment due to him by the law, and passed on him by the judge for the breach of it; this is that which by the schools is called the extrinsecal guilt of sin, to distinguish it from the intrinsecal, which is included in the deordination¹ of the act, and which is inseparable from the sin. And if you would know wherein the nature of forgiveness immediately and primarily consists, it is in the taking off this obligation, and discharging the sinner from it. Hence it is that the pardoned sinner is said not to be under the law: Rom. vi. 14, and not to be under the curse; Gal. iii. 13, and not to be under the sentence of condemnation. And according to this notion, all Scripture phrases are to be construed by which forgiveness is expressed, Rom. viii. 1. God, when he forgives sin, he is said to cover them, Ps. xxxii. 1, lxxxv. 2; Rom. iv. 7; 'to remember them no more,' Isa. xliii. 25; Jer. xxxi. 34; Heb. viii. 12; 'to cast them behind his back,' Isa. xxxviii. 17; 'to throw them into the depth of the sea,' Micah vii. 19; 'to blot them out as a cloud,' Isa. xlv. 22; 'and to turn away his face from them,' Ps. li. 9. By all which expressions we are not to think that God doth not know sin, or that God doth not see sin, or that God is not displeased with sin, or that God is not displeased with believers for their sins; but that he will not so take notice of them as to enter into judgment with the persons for them. So that the forgiven sinner is free from obligation of the punishment, as truly, as surely, as fully, and as perfectly as if he had never committed the sin, but were altogether innocent. In every sin there are two things considerable: first, the offence which is done to God, whereby he is displeased; secondly, the obligation of the man so offending him to eternal condemnation. Now, remission

¹ 'Disorder,' = unlawfulness.—G.

of sin doth wholly lie in the removing of these two ; so that when God doth will neither to punish or to be offended with the person, then he is said to forgive. It is true there remains paternal and medicinal chastisements after sin is forgiven, but no offence or punishment strictly so taken. And is not this a noble plea for a believer to make in the day of account ? But,

Sixthly, Consider that all the sins of believers were laid upon Christ their surety, Heb. vii. 21, 22. What is that ? That is, he became bound to God, he became responsible to him for all their sins, for all that God in justice could charge upon them, and demand for satisfaction : Isa. liii. 5, 6, ' Our salvation was laid upon one that is mighty ; ' Ps. lxxxix. 19 ; Isa. lxiii. 1. As Judah became a surety to Jacob for Benjamin, he engaged himself to his father : ' I will be surety for him, of my hand shalt thou require him ; if I bring him not unto thee, and set him before thee, then let me bear the blame for ever,' Gen. xliii. 9 ; herein he was a type of Christ, that came of him, who is both our surety to God for the discharge of our debt and duty, and God's surety to us for the performance of his promises. ' Father,' saith Christ, ' I will take upon me all the sins of thy¹ people ; I will be bound to answer for them ; I will sacrifice myself for them ; at my hands do thou require satisfaction for their sins, and a full compensation unto thy justice ; I will die, I will lay down my life, I will make my soul an offering for sins ; I will become a curse, I will endure thy wrath.' Oh, what unspeakable comfort is this, that there is a Christ to answer for that which we could never answer ! Christ is a surety in way of satisfaction, undertaking for the debts, the trespasses, the sins of his elect. In this respect it is that Christ is most properly called a surety, in regard of his taking upon him the sins of his elect, and undertaking to answer and make satisfaction unto the justice of God for them. Christ interposeth himself betwixt the wrath of God and his people, undertaking to satisfy their debts, and so to reconcile them unto God. Christ had nothing of his own to be condemned for, nothing of his own to be acquitted from. He was condemned to pay your debt, as your surety, and therefore you cannot be condemned too. He was acquitted from it, being paid, as your surety, and therefore you cannot but be acquitted too. He appeared the first time with your sin to his condemnation, he shall appear the second time without your sin unto your salvation, Heb. ix. 28. God the Father says to Christ, ' Son, if you would have poor sinners pardoned, you must take their debts upon yourself, you must be their surety, and you must enter into bonds to pay every farthing of that debt poor sinners owe ; you must pay all if you will undertake for them, for I will never come upon them for it, but on you.' Certainly these were some of those transactions that were between God the Father and God the Son from all eternity about the pardoning of poor sinners. If ever thy sins be pardoned, Christ must take thy debts upon himself, and be thy surety ; 2 Cor. v. 21, ' He made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin.' Christ was made sin for us—1, by way of imputation, ' for our sins were made to meet upon him,' as that evangelical prophet hath it, Isa. liii. 6 ; and, secondly, by reputation, ' for he was reckoned among malefactors,'

¹ Qu. ' my ' ?—G.

ver. 12. The way of pardon is by a translation of all our sins upon Christ, it is by charging them all upon Christ's score. That is a great expression of Nathan to David, 'The Lord hath put away thy sin;' but the original runs thus, 'The Lord hath made thy sins to pass over;' that is, to pass over from thee to his Son; he hath laid them to his charge.

Now Christ hath discharged all his people's debts and bonds. There is a twofold debt which lay upon us. One was the debt of obedience unto the law, and this Christ did pay by 'fulfilling all righteousness,' Mat. iii. 15. The other was the debt of punishment for our transgressions, and this debt Christ discharged by his death on the cross, Isa. liii. 4, 10, 12; 'And by being made a curse for us, to redeem us from the curse,' Gal. iii. 13. Hence it is that we are said to be 'bought with a price,' 1 Cor. vi. 20, and vii. 23; and that Christ is called our 'Ransom,' *λυτρον*, Mat. xx. 28, and *ἀντίλυτρον*, 1 Tim. ii. 6. The words do signify a valuable price laid down for another's ransom. The blood of Christ, the Son of God, was a valuable price, a sufficient price; it was as much as would take off all enmities, and take away all sin, and to satisfy divine justice, and indeed so it did; and therefore you read that 'in his blood we have redemption, even the forgiveness of our sins,' Eph. i. 7; Col. i. 14, 20; and his death was such a full compensation to divine justice, that the apostle makes a challenge to all: Rom. viii. 33, 'Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect?' and ver. 34, 'Who is he that condemneth? it is Christ that died.' As if he had said, Christ hath satisfied and discharged all. The Greek word *ἀντίλυτρον* is of special emphasis. The Vulgar Latin renders it *redemptionem*, redemption; Beza, *redemptionis pretium*, a price of redemption; but neither of them fully expressing the force of the word, which properly signifieth a counter-price, when one doth undergo in the room of another that which he should have undergone in his own person, as when one yields himself a captive for the redeeming of another out of captivity, or giveth his own life for the saving of another's. There were such sureties among the Greeks as gave life for life, body for body; and in this sense the apostle is to be understood, when he saith that Christ gave himself *ἀντίλυτρον*, a ransom, a counter-price, paying a price for his people. Christ hath laid down a price for all believers, they are his 'dear bought ones,' they are his 'choice redeemed ones,' Isa. li. 11. Christ gave himself *ἀντίλυτρον*, a counter-price, a ransom, submitting himself to the like punishment that his redeemed ones should have undergone. Christ, to deliver his elect from the curse of the law, did subject himself to that same curse of the law under which all mankind lay. Jesus Christ was a true surety, one that gave his life for the life of others. As the apostle saith of Castor and Pollux, that the one redeemed the other's life with his own death,¹ so did the Lord Jesus; he became such a surety for his elect, giving himself an *ἀντίλυτρον*, a ransom for them, John vi. 51; Tit. ii. 14; 1 Pet. i. 18; Rev. i. 51, and v. 9. Oh,

¹ The only reference in the New Testament to Castor and Pollux is found in Acts xxviii. 11, so that for 'apostle,' we must here read 'the poet,' or the like. For the old Greek myth of Castor and Pollux, see any of the classical dictionaries, under *Dioscouri* or *Polydeuces*.—G.

what comfort is this unto us to have such a Jesus, who himself bare our sins, even all our sins, left not one unsatisfied for, laid down a full ransom, a full price, such an expiatory sacrifice as that now we are out of the hands of justice, and wrath, and death, and curse, and hell, and are reconciled and made near by the blood of the everlasting covenant! The blood of Christ, as the Scripture speaks, is 'the blood of God,' Acts xx. 28, so that there is not only satisfaction, but merit in his blood. There is more in Christ's blood than mere payment or satisfaction. There was merit also in it, to acquire and procure and purchase all spiritual good, and all eternal good for the people of God; not only immunities from sin, death, wrath, curse, hell, &c., but privileges and dignities of sons and heirs; yea, all grace, and all love, and all peace, and all glory, even that glorious inheritance purchased by his blood, Eph. i. 14.

Remember this once for all, that in justification our debts are charged upon Christ, they go upon his accounts. You know that in sin there is the vicious and staining quality of it, and there is the resulting guilt of it, which is the obligation of a sinner over to the judgment-seat of God to answer for it. Now this guilt, in which lies our debt, this is charged upon Christ. Therefore, saith the apostle, 'God was in Christ, reconciling the world to himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them,' 2 Cor. v. 19; 'And hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin,' ver. 21. You know in law the wife's debts are charged upon the husband; and if the debtor be disabled, then the creditor sues the surety. *Fide-jussor*, or surety and debtor, in law are reputed as one person. Now Christ is our *fide-jussor*. 'He is made sin for us,' saith the apostle; 'for us'—that is, in our stead—a surety for us, one who puts our scores on his accounts, our burden on his shoulders. So saith that princely prophet Isaiah: Isa. liii. 4, 5, 'He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows.' How so? 'He was wounded for our transgressions; he was bruised for our iniquities;' that is, he stood in our stead, he took upon him the answering of our sins, the satisfying of our debts, the clearing of our guilt; and therefore was it that he was so bruised, &c.

You remember the scape-goat; upon his head all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions in all their sins were confessed and put: 'And the goat did bear upon him all their iniquities,' Lev. xvi. 21, 22. What is the meaning of this? Surely Jesus Christ, upon whom our sins were laid, and who alone died for the ungodly, Rom. v. 6, 'and bore our burdens away.' Therefore the believer in the sense of guilt should run unto Christ, and offer up his blood unto the Father, and say, 'Lord, it is true, I owe thee so much; yet, Father, forgive me; remember that thine own Son was my ransom, his blood was the price; he was my surety, and undertook to answer for my sins. I beseech thee, accept of his atonement, for he is my surety, my redemption. Thou must be satisfied! but Christ hath satisfied thee, not for himself—what sins had he of his own?—but for me. They were my debts which he satisfied for; and look over thy book, and thou shalt find it so; for thou hast said, "He was made sin for us, and that he was wounded for our transgressions." Now, what a singular support, what an admirable comfort is this, that we

ourselves are not to make up our accounts and reckonings; but that Christ hath cleared all accounts and reckonings between God and us. Therefore it is said that 'in his blood we have redemption, even the forgiveness of sins,' Eph. i. 7.

Quest. *Whether it were not against the justice of God that Christ, who was in himself innocent,—without all sin, a Lamb without a spot,—should bear and endure all these punishments for us who were the offending and guilty and obnoxious persons only? Or if you please thus,*

Whether God was not unjust to give his Son Jesus Christ to be our surety and mediator and redeemer and saviour, forasmuch as Christ could not be any one of these for and unto us but by a willing susception of our sins upon himself, to be for them responsible unto the justice of God, in suffering those punishments which were due for our sins?

I shall speak a few words to this main question. I say, then, that it is not always and in all cases unjust, but it is sometimes and in some cases very just, to punish one who is himself innocent, for him or those who are the nocent and guilty. Grotius in his book, *De Satisfactione*, gives divers instances; but I shall mention only two.

First, In the case of conjunction, where the innocent party and the nocent party do become legally one party; and therefore if a man marries a woman indebted, he thereupon becomes obnoxious to pay her debts, although, absolutely considered, he was not obnoxious thereunto. But,

Secondly, In case of suretyship, where a person, knowing the weak and insufficient condition of another, doth yet voluntarily put forth himself, and will be bound to the creditor for him as his surety to answer for him, by reason of which suretyship the creditor may come upon him, and deal with him as he might have dealt with the principal debtor himself; and this course we do ordinarily take with sureties for the recovery of our right, without any violation of justice. Now, both these are exactly applicable to the business in hand; for Jesus Christ was pleased to marry our nature unto himself; he did partake of our flesh and blood, and became man, and one with us. And besides that, he did, both by the will of his Father and his own free consent, become our surety, and was content to stand in our stead or room, so as to be made sin and curse for us—that is, to have all our debts and sorrows, all our sins and punishments laid upon him, and did engage himself to satisfy God by bearing and suffering what we should have borne and suffered. And therefore although Jesus Christ, absolutely considered in himself, was innocent and had no sin inherent in himself, which therefore might make him liable to death and wrath and curse, yet by becoming one with us, and sustaining the office of our surety, our sins were laid on him, and our sins being laid upon him, he made himself therefore obnoxious, and that justly, to all those punishments which he did suffer for our sins. I do confess, that had Christ been unwilling and forced into this suretyship, or had any detriment or prejudice risen to any party concerned in this transaction, then some complaint might have been made concerning the justice of God. But,

[1.] First, *There was a willingness on all sides for the passive work of Christ.* First, God the Father, who was the offended party, he was willing, which Christ assures us of when he said, 'Thy will be done,' Mat. xxvi. 42; Acts iv. 25-28. Secondly, We poor sinners, who are the offending party, are willing. We accept of this gracious and wonderful redemption, and bless the Lord who 'so loved us as to give his Son for us.' And, *thirdly*, Jesus Christ was willing to suffer for us: 'Behold I come,' Ps. xl. 7: 'And shall I not drink of the cup which my Father hath given me to drink?' John xviii. 11: 'I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished?' Luke xii. 50. He calls the death of his cross a baptism, partly because it was a certain immersion into extreme calamities into which he was cast, and partly because in the cross he was so to be sprinkled in his own blood as if he had been drowned and baptized in it. The Greek word, *συνέχομαι*, that is here rendered straitened, signifies to be pained, pressed, or pent up, not with such a grief as made him unwilling to come to it, but with such as made him desire that it were once over. 'There seems,' saith Grotius, 'to be a similitude implied in the original word, taken from a woman with child, which is so afraid of her bringing forth that yet she would fain be eased of her burden.' John x. 11, 'I am the good Shepherd. The good Shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.' Christ is that good Shepherd by an excellency, that held not his life dear for his sheep's safety: ver. 15, 'I lay down my life for the sheep': ver. 17, 'Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life': ver. 18, 'No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself.' A necessity there was of our Saviour's death, but it was a necessity of immutability—because God had decreed it, Acts ii. 23—not of coaction. He laid down his life freely, he died willingly. But,

[2.] Secondly, *No parties whatsoever were prejudiced, or lost by it.* We lost nothing by it, for we are saved by his death, and reconciled by his death; and Christ lost nothing by it: 'Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and enter into his glory?' Luke xxiv. 26. 'The Captain of our salvation is made perfect through sufferings,' Heb. ii. 10. You may see Christ's glorious rewards for his sufferings in that Isa. liii. 10-12. And God the Father lost nothing by it, for he is glorified by it: 'I have glorified thee on earth, I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do,' John xvii. 4. Yea, he is fully satisfied and repaired again in all the honour which he lost by our sinning—I say he is now fully repaired again by the sufferings of Christ, in which he found a price sufficient, and a ransom, and enough to make peace for ever. In the day of account, a Christian's great plea is, that Christ has been his surety, and paid his debts, and made up his accounts for him.

II. Now, from what has been said last, a Christian may form up this second plea to the ten scriptures in the margin,¹ that refer either to the general judgment or to the particular judgment that will pass upon every Christian immediately after death. *O blessed Lord! upon my first believing and closing with Jesus Christ, thou didst justify me in the*

¹ Eccles. xi. 9, and xii. 14; Mat. xii. 36, and xviii. 23; Luke xvi. 2; Rom. xiv. 10, 12; 2 Cor. v. 10; Heb. ix. 27, and xiii. 17; 1 Pet. iv. 5.

court of glory from all my sins, both as to guilt and punishment. Upon my first act of believing, thou didst pardon all my sins, thou didst forgive all my iniquities, thou didst blot out all my transgressions; and as upon my first believing thou didst give me the remission of all my sins, so upon my first believing thou didst free me from a state of condemnation, and interest me in the great salvation. Upon my first believing, I was united to Jesus Christ, and I was clothed with the righteousness of Christ, which covered all my sins and discharged me from all my transgressions, Rom. viii. 10; Heb. ii. 3; and remember, O Lord, that at the very moment of my dissolution thou didst really, perfectly, universally, and finally forgive all my sins. Every debt that moment was discharged, and every score that moment was crossed, and every bill and bond that moment was cancelled, so that there was not left in the book of thy remembrance one sin, no, not the least sin, standing upon record against my soul; and besides all this, thou knowest, O Lord, that all my sins were laid upon Christ my surety, Heb. vii. 21, 22, and that he became responsible for them all. He did die, he did lay down his life, he did make his soul an offering for my sins, he did become a curse, he did endure thy infinite wrath, he did give complete satisfaction, and a full compensation unto thy justice for all my sins, debts, trespasses. This is my plea, O Lord! and by this plea I shall stand. 'Well,' saith the Lord, 'I allow of this plea, I accept of this plea as just, honourable, and righteous. Enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.' But,

Seventhly, Consider, that whatever we are bound to do, or to suffer by the law of God, all that did Christ do and suffer for us, as being our surety and mediator. Now the law of God hath a double challenge or demand upon us; one is of active obedience, in fulfilling what it requires; the other is of passive obedience, in suffering that punishment which lies upon us, for the transgression of it, in doing what it forbids. For as we are created by God, we did owe unto him all obedience which he required; and as we sinned against God, we did owe unto him a suffering of all that punishment which he threatened, and we being fallen by transgression, can neither pay the one debt, nor yet the other; we cannot do all that the law requires, nay of ourselves we can do nothing; neither can we so suffer as to satisfy God in his justice wronged by us, or to recover ourselves into life and favour again; and therefore Jesus Christ, who was God, made man, did become our surety, and stood in our stead or room; and he did perform what we should but could not perform; and he did bear our sins and our sorrows. He did suffer and bear for us what we ourselves should have borne and suffered, whereby he did fully satisfy the justice of God, and made our peace, and purchased life and happiness for us. Let me a little more clearly and fully open this great truth in these few particulars.

(1.) *First, Jesus Christ did perform that active obedience unto the law of God, which we should, but, by reason of sin, could not perform; in which respect he is said, Gal. iv. 4, 'to be made under the law, that he might redeem them that were under the law.'* So far was Christ under the law, as to redeem them that were under the law. But redeem them that were under the law he could not, unless by dis-

charging the bonds of the law in force upon us ; and all those bonds could not be, and were not discharged, unless a perfect righteousness had been presented on our behalf, who were under the law, to fulfil the law. Now there is a twofold righteousness necessary to the actual fulfilling of the law : one is an internal righteousness of the nature of man ; the other is an external righteousness of the life or works of man : both of these do the law require. The former, ‘ Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart,’ &c., which is the sum of the first table ; ‘ And thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself,’ which is the sum of the second table : the latter, ‘ Do this and live,’ Lev. xviii. 5, ‘ He that continueth not in all things, which are written in the book of the law, to do them, is cursed,’ Gal. iii. 10. Now both these righteousnesses were found in Christ. First, the internal : Heb. vii. 26, ‘ He was holy, harmless, undefiled, separated from sinners ;’ Heb. ix. 14, ‘ And offered himself without spot to God ;’ 2 Cor. v. 21, ‘ He knew no sin.’ Secondly, external : 1 Peter ii. 22, ‘ He did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth ;’ John xvii. 4, ‘ I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do ;’ Mat. iii. 15, ‘ He must fulfil all righteousness,’ Rom. x. 4 ; ‘ Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.’ Now concerning Christ’s active obedience to the law of God, these things are considerable in it.

[1.] First, *The universality of it* : he did whatsoever his Father required, and left nothing of his Father’s will undone. He kept the whole law, and offended not in one point. Whatever was required of us, by virtue of any law, that he did, and fulfilled. Hence he is said to be made under the law, Gal. iv. 4, subject or obnoxious to it, to all the precepts or commands of it. Christ was so made under the law, as those were under the law whom he was to redeem. Now we were under the law, not only as obnoxious to its penalties, but as bound to all the duties of it. That this is our being under the law, is evident by that of the apostle : Gal. iv. 21, ‘ Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law.’ Surely it was not the penalty of the law they desired to be under, but to be under it in respect of obedience. So Mat. iii. 15. Here Christ tells you, that ‘ it became him to fulfil all righteousness,’ *πάσαν δικαιοσύνην*, all manner of righteousness whatsoever ; that is, everything that God required, as is evident from the application of that general axiom to the baptism of John. But,

[2.] Secondly, *The exactness and perfection of it*. He kept the whole law exactly. As he was not wanting in matter, so he did not fail in the manner of performing his Father’s will. There was no defects, nothing lacking in his obedience ; he did all things well. What we are pressing towards, and reaching forth unto, he attained ; he was perfect in every good work, and stood complete in the whole will of his Father. And hence it is, that it is recorded of him, that he was without sin, knew no sin, did no sin, which could not be if he had failed in anything. But,

[3.] Thirdly, *The constancy of it*. Christ did not obey by fits, but constantly. Though we cannot, yet he ‘ continued in all things which are written in the book of the law, to do them.’ This righteous one held on his way, he did not fail, nor was he discouraged ; yea, when

persecution and tribulation did arise against him, because of his doing the will of his Father, he was not offended, but did always do the things which pleased his Father, as he told the Jews, John viii. 29.

[4.] Fourthly, *The delight that he took* 'in doing the will of his Father:' Ps. xl. 8, 'I delight to do thy will, O my God; yea, thy law is within my heart,' or in the midst of my bowels, as the Hebrew runs. By the law of God we are to understand all the commandments of God. There is not one command which Christ did not delight to do. Christ's obedience was without murmuring or grudging; his Father's commandments were not grievous to him; he tells his disciples, that it was his 'meat to do the will of him that sent him, and to finish his work,' John iv. 34. But,

[5.] Fifthly, *The virtue and efficacy of it*; for his obedience, his righteousness never returns to him void, but it always 'accomplishes that which he pleases, and prospers in the thing whereto he ordains it,' and that is the making others righteous, according to that of the apostle: Rom. v. 19, 'For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the disobedience of one shall many be made righteous;' 2 Cor. v. 21, 'God made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him;' and accordingly we are, 'for of God he is made unto us righteousness,' 1 Cor. i. 30.

The perfect complete obedience of Christ to the law is certainly reckoned to us. That is an everlasting truth, 'If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments,' Mat. xix. 17. The commandments must be kept either by ourselves, or by our surety, or there is no entering into life; Christ did obey the law, not for himself but for us, and in our stead: Rom. v. 18, 19, 'By the righteousness of one, the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life; by the obedience of one, many shall be made righteous.' By his obedience to the law, we are made righteous. Christ's obedience is reckoned to us for righteousness. Christ, by his obedience to the royal law, is made righteousness to us, 1 Cor. i. 30. We are saved by that perfect obedience, which Christ, when he was in this world, yielded to the blessed law of God. Mark, whatever Christ did as mediator, he did it for those whose mediator he was, or in whose stead and for whose good he executed the office of a mediator before God. This the Holy Ghost witnesseth: Rom. viii. 3, 4, 'What the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh, that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us.' The word 'likeness,' is not simply to be referred to flesh, but to sinful flesh, as Basil well observes; for Christ was like unto us in all things, sin only excepted. If with our justification from sin, there be joined that active obedience of Christ, which is imputed to us, we are just before God, according to that perfect form which the law requireth. Because we could not, in this condition of weakness whereinto we are cast by sin, come to God, and be freed from condemnation by the law, God sent Christ as a mediator to do and suffer whatever the law required at our hands for that end and purpose, that we might not be condemned, but accepted of God. It was all to this end, that the righteousness of the law

might be fulfilled in us; that is, which the law required of us, consisting in duties of obedience. This Christ performed for us. This expression of the apostle, 'God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh,' if you will add to it that of Gal. iv. 4—'that he was so sent forth, as that he was *γενόμενον ὑπὸ νομον*, 'made under the law;' that is, obnoxious to it, to yield all the obedience that it doth require,—compares¹ the whole of what Christ did or suffered; and all this, the Holy Ghost tells us was for us, ver. 5, He that made the law as God, was made under the law as God-man, whereby both the obligations of the law fell upon him: 1. Penal; 2. Preceptive. First, The penal obligation to undergo the curse, and so to satisfy divine justice. Secondly, The preceptive obligation, to fulfil all righteousness, Mat. iii. 15. This obligation he fulfilled by doing, the other by dying. Mark, this double obligation could not have befallen the Lord Jesus Christ upon any natural account of his own, but upon his mediatory account only, as he voluntarily became the surety of this new and better covenant, Heb. vii. 22; so that the fruit and benefit of Christ's voluntary subjection to the law, redoundeth not at all to himself, 'but unto the persons which were given him of the Father,' John xvii., whose sponsor he became. For their sakes he underwent the penal obligation of the law, that it might do them no harm, 'He being made a curse for us,' Gal. iii. 13; and for their sakes he fulfilled the preceptive obligation of the law, 'do this,' that so the law might do them good. This the evangelical apostle clearly asserts, 'Christ is the end of the law for righteousness, to every one that believeth,' Rom. x. 4, 'Christ is the end of the law,' *τέλος*. What end? why *finis perfectivus*, the perfection and accomplishment of the law; he is the end of the law for righteousness, that is, to the end that by Christ his active obedience, God might have his perfect law perfectly kept, that so there might be a righteousness extant in the human nature, every way adequate to the perfection of the law. And who must wear this garment of righteousness, when Christ hath finished it? Surely the believer who wanted a righteousness of his own; for so it follows, 'for righteousness to every one that believeth,' that is, that every poor naked sinner, believing in Jesus Christ, might have a righteousness, wherein being found, he might appear at God's tribunal, but his nakedness not appear, but as Jacob in the garment of his elder brother Esau, so the believer in the garment of his elder brother Jesus, might inherit the blessing, even the great blessing of justification.

The only matter of man's righteousness, since the fall of Adam, wherein he can appear with comfort before the justice of God, and consequently, whereby alone he can be justified in his sight, is the obedience and sufferings of Jesus Christ, the righteousness of the mediator. There is not any other way imaginable, how the justice of God may be satisfied, and we may have our sins pardoned in a way of justice, but by the righteousness of the Son of God, and therefore is his name Jehovah, *צדקני*, 'The Lord our righteousness,' Jer. xxiii. 6. This is his name; that is, this is the prerogative of the Lord Jesus, a matter that appertains to him alone, to be able to bring in 'an everlasting righteousness, and to make reconciliation for iniquity,' Dan. ix. 24.

¹ Qu. 'comprises'?—G.

It is by Christ alone, that they who 'believe are justified from all things, from which they cannot be justified by the law of Moses,' Acts xiii. 39.

III. Now from the active obedience of Christ, a sincere Christian may form up this third plea as to the ten scriptures in the margin,¹ that refer either to the general judgment, or to the particular judgment that will pass upon every Christian immediately after death. *O blessed God, thou knowest that Jesus Christ, as my surety, did perform all that active obedience unto thy holy and righteous law that I should have performed, but by reason of the indwelling power of sin, and of the vexing and molesting power of sin, and of the captivating power of sin, could not.* There was in Christ an habitual righteousness, a conformity of his nature to the holiness of the law: 1 Pet. i. 19, 'For he is a lamb without spot and blemish.' The law could never have required so much righteousness as is to be found in him; and as for practical righteousness, there was never any aberration in his thoughts, words, or deeds, Heb. vii. 25; 'The prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me,' John xiv. 30. The apostle tells us, that 'we are made the righteousness of God in him,' 2 Cor. v. 21. He doth emphatically add that clause, *ἐν αὐτῷ, in him*, that he may take away all conceit of inherence in us, and establish the doctrine of imputation. As Christ is made sin in us by imputation, so we are made righteousness in him by the same way. Augustine's place which Beza cites is a most full commentary, 'God the Father,' saith he, 'made him to be sin, who knew no sin, that we might be the righteousness of God, not our own; and in him, that is in Christ, not in ourselves; and being thus justified, we are so righteous, as if we were righteousness itself.' Oh, holy God, Christ my surety hath universally kept thy royal law, he hath not offended in any one point; yea, he hath exactly and perfectly kept the whole law of God, he stood complete in the whole will of the Father; his active obedience was so full, so perfect, and so adequate to all the law's demands, that the law could not but say, 'I have enough, I am fully satisfied; I have found a ransom, I can ask no more.' Neither was the obedience of Christ fickle or transient, but permanent and constant; it was his delight, his meat and drink, yea, his heaven, to be still a-doing the will of his Father, John iv. 33, 34. Assuredly, whilst our Lord Jesus Christ was in this world, he did in his own person fully obey the law; he did in his own person perfectly conform to all the holy, just, and righteous commands of the law. Now this his most perfect and complete obedience to the law is made over to all his members, to all believers, to all sincere Christians; it is reckoned to them, it is imputed to them, as if they themselves, in their own persons, had performed it. All sound believers being in Christ, as their head and surety, the law's righteousness is fulfilled in them legally and imputatively, though it be not fulfilled in them formally, subjectively, inherently, or personally; suitable to that of the apostle, that 'the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us,' Rom. viii. 4. Mark, not by us, but in us; for Christ in our nature hath fulfilled the right of the law, and therefore in us, because of our communion

¹ Eccles. xi. 9, and xii. 14; Mat. xii. 36, and xviii. 23; Luke xvi. 2; Rom. xiv. 10, 12; 2 Cor. v. 10; Heb. ix. 27, and xiii. 17; 1 Pet. iv. 5.

with him, and our ingrafting into him.¹ God hath condemned sin in the flesh of his Son, that all that which the law by right could require of us might be performed by him for us, so as if we ourselves had in our own persons performed the same. The law must have its right before a sinner can be saved; we cannot of ourselves fulfil the right of it. But here is the comfort, Christ our surety hath fulfilled it in us, and we have fulfilled it in him. Certainly, whatsoever Christ did concerning the law is ours by imputation so fully, as if ourselves had done it. Does the law require obedience? saith Christ, 'I will give it,' Mat. iii. 15. Does the law threaten curses? says Christ, 'They shall be borne,' Mat. v. 17, 18. The precept of the law, saith Christ, shall be kept, and the promises received, and the punishments endured, that poor sinners may be saved. Our righteousness and title to eternal life do indispensably depend upon the imputation of Christ's active obedience to us. There must be a perfect obeying of the law, as the condition of life, either by the sinner himself or by his surety, or else no life; which doth sufficiently evince the absolute necessity of the imputation of Christ's active obedience to us. The sinner himself being altogether unable to fulfil the law, that he may stand righteous before the great and glorious God, Christ's fulfilling of it must necessarily be imputed to him in order to righteousness. There are two great things which Jesus Christ did undertake for his redeemed ones; the one was to make full satisfaction to divine justice for all their sins. Now this he did by his blood and death. The other was to yield most absolute conformity to the law of God, both in nature and life. By the one he has freed all his redeemed ones from hell, and by the other he has qualified all the redeemed ones for heaven. This is my plea, O Lord, and by this plea I shall stand. 'Well,' saith the Lord, 'I accept of this plea as honourable, just, and righteous; Enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.'

(2.) Secondly, As Jesus Christ did for us perform all that active obedience which the law of God required; so he did also *suffer all those punishments which we had deserved by the transgression of the law of God*, in which respect he is said, 2 Cor. ii. 22, 'To be made sin for us;' 1 Pet. ii. 24, 'Himself to bear our sins in his own body on the tree;' 1 Pet. iii. 18, 'For Christ also hath once suffered for sin, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God;' Phil. ii. 8, 'To humble himself and to become obedient unto death, even the death of the cross;' Gal. iii. 13, 'To be made a curse, an execration for us;' Eph. v. 2, 'To give himself for us an offering and sacrifice unto God;' Heb. ix. 15, 'And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which were called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.' Now concerning the passive obedience, or suffering of Christ, I would present unto you these conclusions.

[1.] First, That the sufferings of Jesus Christ were *free and voluntary, and not constrained or forced*. Austin saith, that Christ did suffer *quia voluit, et quando voluit, et quomodo voluit*: John x. 17,

¹ δικαιομα, which Beza well renders, *Ut jus legis*, that the right of the law might be fulfilled in us.

'I lay down my life;' ver. 18, 'No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself; I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again;' Gal. ii. 20, 'Who gave himself for me.' Christ's sufferings did rise out of obedience to his Father: John x. 18, 'This commandment have I received of my Father;' and John xviii. 11, 'The cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?' And Christ's sufferings did spring and rise out of his love to us, 'who loved me, and gave himself for me,' Gal. ii. 20; so Eph. v. 25, 'As Christ loved the church, and gave himself for it.' And indeed, had Christ's sufferings been involuntary, they could not have been a part of his obedience, much less could they have mounted to anything of merit for us. Christ was very free and willing to undertake the work of man's redemption. When he cometh into the world, he saith, 'Sacrifice and offerings thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me; then said I, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God,' Heb. x. 5. It is the expression of one overjoyed to do the will of God. So Luke xii. 50, 'I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished.' There was no power, no force to compel Christ to lay down his life, therefore it is called the offering of the body of Jesus, Heb. x. 10. Nothing could fasten Christ to the cross, but the golden link of his free love. Christ was big of love, and therefore he freely opens all the pores of his body, that his blood may flow out from every part, as a precious balsam to cure our wounds. The heart of Christ was so full of love that it could not hold, but must needs burst out through every part and member of his body into a bloody sweat, Luke xxii. 44. At this time it is most certain that there was no manner of violence offered to the body of Christ; no man touched him, or came near him with whips, or thorns, or spears, or lances. Though the night was cold, and the air cold, and the earth on which he kneeled cold, yet such a burning love he had in his breasts to his people as cast him into a bloody sweat. It is certain that Christ never repented of his sufferings: Isa. liii. 11, 'He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied.' It is a metaphor that alludes to a mother, who though she hath had hard labour, yet doth not repent of it, when she sees a child brought forth. So though Christ had hard travail upon the cross, yet he doth not repent of it, but thinks all his sweat and blood well bestowed, because he sees the man-child of redemption is brought forth into the world. He shall be satisfied: the Hebrew word, **יָשַׁבַּע**, signifies such a satiating as a man hath at some sweet repast or banquet. And what does this speak out, but his freeness in suffering?

Obj. But here some may object, and say, *that the Lord Jesus, when the hour of his sufferings drew nigh, did repent of his suretyship; and in a deep passion prayed to his Father to be released from his sufferings:* 'Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me;' and that three times over, Mat. xxvi. 39, 42, 44.

Ans. Now to this objection I shall answer, first more generally, and secondly more particularly.

[1.] *First*, in the general, I say that this earnest prayer of his doth not denote absolutely his unwillingness, but rather sets out the greatness of his willingness; for although Christ as a man was of the same

natural affections with us, and desires, and abhorrences of what was destructive to nature, and therefore did fear and deprecate that bitter cup which he was ready to drink; yet as our mediator and surety, and knowing it would be a cup of salvation to us, though of exceeding bitterness to himself, he did yield and lay aside his natural reluctances as man, and willingly obeyed his Father's will to drink it, as our loving mediator, as if he should say, 'O Father, whatsoever becometh of me, of my natural fear or desire, I am content to submit to the drinking of this cup; thy will be done.' But,

[2.] *Secondly*, and more particularly, I answer, that in these words of our Lord there is a twofold voice. 1. There is *vox nature*, the voice of nature; 'Let this cup pass from me.' 2. There is *vox officii*, the voice of his mediatory office; 'Nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.'

The first voice, 'Let this cup pass,' intimates the velleity of the inferior part of his soul, the sensitive part, proceeding from unnatural¹ abhorrency of death as he was a creature. The latter voice, 'Nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt,' expresseth the full and free consent of his will, complying with the will of his Father in that grand everlasting design of 'bringing many sons unto glory, by making the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings,' Heb. ii. 10.

It was an argument of the truth of Christ his human nature, that he naturally dreaded a dissolution. He owed it to himself as a creature to desire the conservation of his being, and he could not become unnatural to himself, 'For no man ever yet hated his own flesh,' Eph. v. 29: Phil. ii. 8, 'But being a son, he learned submission, and became obedient to the death, even the death of the cross;' that shameful, cruel, cursed death of the cross, the suffering whereof he owed to that solemn astipulation, which from everlasting passed between his Father and himself, the third person in the blessed Trinity, the Holy Ghost being witness. And therefore, though the cup was the bitterest cup that ever was given man to drink, as wherein there was not death only, but wrath and curse: yet seeing there was no other way left of satisfying the justice of his Father, and of saving sinners, most willingly he took the cup, and having given thanks, as it were, in those words, 'The cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?' never did bridegroom go with more cheerfulness to be married to his bride, than our Lord Jesus went to his cross, Luke xii. 20.

Though the cup that God the Father put into Christ's hand was bitter, very bitter, yea, the bitterest that ever was put into any hand, yet he found it sweetened with three ingredients. 1. It was but a cup, it was not a sea; 2. It was his Father, and not Satan, that mingled it, and that put in all the bitter ingredients that were in it; 3. It was a gift, not a curse, as to himself: 'The cup which my Father *giveth me*.' He drank it, I say, and drank it up every drop, leaving nothing behind for his redeemed but large draughts of love and salvation, in the sacramental cup of his own institution, saying, 'This cup is the new testament in my blood, for the remission of sins; this do ye in remembrance of me,' 1 Cor. xi. 25; Mat. xxvi. 28. Thus, my friends, look upon Christ as mediator, in which capacity only he covenanted with his Father for the salvation of mankind; and there was not so

¹ 'Qu. 'a natural' ?—ED.

much as a shadow of any receding from or repenting of what he had undertaken. But,

Ans. 2. Secondly, As the sufferings of Jesus Christ were very free and voluntary, so they were *very great and heinous*. What agony, what torment was our Saviour racked with! how deep were his wounds! how weighty his burden! how full of trembling his cup, when he lay under the mountains of the guilt of all the elect! How bitter were his tears! how painful his sweat! how sharp his encounters! how dreadful his death! who can compute¹ how many vials of God's inexpressible, insupportable wrath Christ drank off? In that 53d of Isaiah you may read of despising, rejected, stripes, smittings, wounds, sorrows, bruising, chastisement, oppression, affliction, cutting off, putting to grief, and pouring out of his soul to death; all these put together speaks out Christ to be a very great sufferer. He was a man of sorrows, as if he were a man made up of sorrows: as the man of sin, as if he were made up of sin, as if he were nothing else. He knew more sorrows than any man, yea, than all men ever did; for the iniquity, and consequently the sorrows, of all men met in him as if he had been their centre; and he was acquainted with griefs; he had little acquaintance else, grief was his familiar acquaintance, he had no acquaintance with laughter. We read not that he laughed at all, when he was in the world. His other acquaintance stood afar off, but grief followed him to the cross. From his birth to his death, from his cradle to the cross, from the womb to the tomb, he was a man of sorrows, and never were sorrows like his; he might say, Never grief or sorrow like mine. It is indeed impossible to express the sufferings and sorrows of Christ; and the Greek Christians used to beg of God, *δὲ ἀγνωστων κοπων*, that for the unknown sufferings of Christ he would have mercy upon them! Though Christ's sufferings are abundantly made known, yet they are but little known; eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, nor hath it or can it enter into the heart of man to conceive what Christ suffered; 'who hath known the power of God's wrath?' Christ Jesus knew it, for he underwent it; his whole life was made up of suffering. He was no sooner born, but sufferings came trooping in upon him. He was born in an inn, yea, in a stable, and had but a manger for his cradle. As soon as his birth was noised abroad, Herod, under a pretence of worshipping of him, had a design to murder him, so that his supposed father was fain to fly into Egypt to secure his life. He was persecuted before he could, after the manner of men, be sensible of persecution; and as he grew up in years, so his sufferings grew up with him. Hunger and thirst, travel and weariness, scorns and reproaches, false accusations and contradictions still waited on him, and he had not where to lay his head: 1 Pet. iii. 18, 'For Christ also hath once suffered for sins.' This is the wonderment of angels, the happiness of fallen man, and the torment of devils, &c., that Christ hath suffered. The apostle's words look like a riddle, 'Christ hath suffered;' as if he should say, read thou if thou canst what he hath suffered; as for my part they are so many, that in this short epistle I have no mind to record them; and they are so grievous, that my passionate love won't suffer me to repeat them, and

¹ Misprinted 'impute.'—G.

therefore I content myself thus abruptly to deliver them, 'Christ hath suffered.' Christ's sufferings were unspeakable, his sufferings were unutterable; and therefore the apostle satisfies himself with this imperfect, broken speech, 'Christ hath suffered.' Oh, what woes and lamentations, what cries and exclamations, what complaints and sorrows, what wringing of hands, what knocking of breasts, what weeping of eyes, what wailing of tongues belong to the speaking and hearing of this doleful tragedy! Even in the prologue I tremble, and at the first entrance I am as at a *non-plus*, that I know not with what woeful gesture to act it, with what moanful voice to pronounce it, with what mournful words, with what pathological speeches, with what emphatical phrases, with what interrupted accents, with what passionate compassionate plaints to express it. The multiplicity of the plot, and the variety of the acts and scenes is so intricate, that my memory fails to comprise it; the matter so important, and the story so excellent, that my tongue fails to declare it; the cruelty so savage, and the massacre so barbarous, that my heart even fails to consider it. Wherefore I must needs content myself, with the apostle here, to speak but imperfectly of it, and thinks this enough to say, 'Christ hath suffered;' and well may I think this enough, for behold what perfection there is in this seeming imperfect speech. For,

First, To say indefinitely, he 'suffered' without any limitation of time, what is it but to say that he always suffered without exception of time? And so indeed the prophet speaks of him, namely, 'That he was a man of sorrows,' Isa. liii. 3. His whole life was filled up with sufferings. But,

Secondly, To say only he 'suffered,' and nothing else, what is it but to say that he patiently suffered; he never resisted, never rebelled, never opposed? 'He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and as a lamb dumb before the shearer, so opened he not his mouth,' Acts viii. 32; Isa. liii. 7. 'And when he was reviled, he reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not,' 1 Pet. ii. 23. But,

Thirdly, To say precisely he 'suffered,' and no more, what is it but to say that he freely suffered, that he voluntarily suffered? Christ was under no force, no compulsion, but freely suffered himself to suffer, and voluntarily suffered the Jews to make him suffer, having power to quit himself from suffering if he had pleased. 'I lay down my life, no man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again,' John x. 17. But of this before.

Fourthly, To say plainly he 'suffered,' what is it but to say that he innocently suffered, that he wrongfully suffered? For had he been a malefactor, or an offender, it should have been said that he was punished, or that he was executed; but he was full of innocency, he was holy and harmless; and so it follows in that 1 Pet. iii. 18, 'The just for the unjust.' But,

Fifthly, To say peremptorily he 'suffered,' what is it but to say that he principally suffered, that he excessively suffered? To say he 'suffered,' what is it but to say he was the chief sufferer, the arch-sufferer? and that not only in respect of the manner of his sufferings, that he suffered absolutely so as never did any, but also in respect of the mea-

sure of his sufferings, that he suffered excessively beyond what ever any did. And thus we may well understand and take those words, 'He suffered.' That lamentation of the prophet, Lam. i. 12, is very applicable to Christ, 'Behold, and see if there be any sorrows like unto my sorrow, which is done unto me, wherewith the Lord hath afflicted me in the day of his fierce anger.' Now, is it not enough for the apostle to say that 'Christ has suffered;' but will you yet ask what? But pray, friends, be satisfied, and rather of the two ask what not? For what sufferings can you think of that Christ did not suffer? Christ suffered in his birth, and he suffered in his life, and he suffered in his death; he suffered in his body, for he was diversely tormented; he suffered in his soul, for his soul was heavy unto death; he suffered in his estate, they parted his raiment, and he had not where to rest his head; he suffered in his good name, for he was counted a Samaritan, a devilish sorcerer, a wine-bibber, an enemy to Caesar, &c. He suffered from heaven, when he cried out, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' He suffered from the earth, when, being hungry, the fig-tree proved fruitless to him. He suffered from hell, Satan assaulting and encountering of him with his most black and horrid temptations. He began his life meanly and basely, and was sharply persecuted. He continued his life poorly and distressedly, and was cruelly hated. He ended his life woefully and miserably, and was most grievously tormented with whips, thorns, nails, and, above all, with the terrors of his Father's wrath and horrors of hellish agonies.

Ego sum qui peccavi: 'I am the man that have sinned; but these sheep, what have they done?' said David, when he saw the angel destroying his people, 2 Sam. xxiv. 17. And the same speech may every one of us take up for ourselves and apply to Christ, and say, 'I have sinned, I have done wickedly; but this sheep, what hath he done?' Yea, much more cause have we than David had to take up this complaint. For,

First, David saw them die, whom he knew to be sinners; but we see him die, who, we know, 'knew no sin,' 2 Cor. v. 21. But,

Secondly, David saw them die a quick, speedy death; we see him die with lingering torments. He was a-dying from six to nine, Mat. xxvii. 45, 46. Now in this three hours' darkness, he was set upon by all the powers of darkness with utmost might and malice; but he foiled and spoiled them all, and made an open show of them, as the Roman conquerors used to do, triumphing over them on his cross as on his chariot of state, Col. ii. 15, attended by his vanquished enemies, with their hands bound behind them, Eph. iv. 8. But,

Thirdly, David saw them die, who, by their own confession, was worth ten thousand of them; we see him die for us, whose worth admitteth no comparison. But,

Fourthly, David saw the Lord of glory destroying mortal men, and we see mortal men destroying the Lord of glory, 1 Cor. ii. 8. Oh, how much more cause have we then to say as David, 'I have sinned, I have done wickedly; but this innocent Lamb, the Lord Jesus, what hath he done? what hath he deserved that he should be thus greatly tormented?' Tully, though a great orator, yet when he comes to speak of the death of the cross, he wants words to express it,—*Quid*

dicam, in crucem tollere? What shall I say of this death? saith he. But,

Ans. 3. Thirdly, As the sufferings of Christ were very great, so *the punishments which Christ did suffer for our sins, these were in their kinds and parts and degrees and proportion all those punishments which were due unto us by reason of our sins, and which we ourselves should otherwise have suffered.* Whatsoever we should have suffered as sinners, all that did Christ suffer as our surety and mediator, always excepting those punishments which could not be endured without a pollution and guilt of sin: 'The chastisement of our peace was upon him,' Isa. liii. 5; and including the punishments common to the nature of man, not the personal, arising out of imperfection and defect and distemper. Now, the punishments due to us for sin were corporal and spiritual. And again, they were the punishments of loss and of sense; and all these did Christ suffer for us, which I shall evidence by an induction of particulars.

I. First, *That Christ suffered corporal punishments is most clear in Scripture.* You read of the injuries to his person, of the crown of thorns on his head, of the smiting of his cheeks, of spitting on his face, of the scourging of his body, of the cross on his back, of the vinegar in his mouth, of the nails in his hands and feet, of the spear in his side, and of his crucifying and dying on the cross: 1 Pet. ii. 24, 'Who himself in his own body on the tree bare our sins;' 1 Cor. xv. 3, 'Christ died for our sins, according to the Scriptures;' Rev. i. 5, 'And washed us from our sins in his own blood;' Col. i. 14, 'In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins;' Mat. xxvi. 28, 'For this is my blood of the New Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.' Christ suffered derision in every one of his offices.

First, In his kingly office. They put a sceptre in his hand, a crown on his head, and bowed their knees, saying, 'Hail, king of the Jews!' Mat. xxvii. 29.

Secondly, In his priestly office. 'They put upon him a gorgeous white robe,' such as the priests wore, Luke xxiii. 11.¹

Thirdly, In his prophetic office. 'When they had blindfolded him, Prophesy, say they, who it is that smiteth thee,' Luke xxii. 64. Sometimes they said, 'Thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil,' John viii. 48; and sometimes they said, 'He is beside himself, why hear ye him?' Mark iii. 21.

And as Christ suffered in every one of his offices, so he suffered in every member of his body: in his hearing, by their reproaches, and crying, 'Crucify him, crucify him;' in his sight, by their scoffings and scornful gestures; in his smell, in his being in that noisome place Golgotha, Mat. xxvii. 33; in his taste, by his tasting of vinegar mingled with gall, which they gave him to drink, Mat. xxvii. 33; in his feeling, by the thorns on his head, blows on his cheeks, spittle on his face, the spear in his side,² and the nails in his hands. He suffered in all parts and members of his body from head to foot. His head, which deserved a better crown than the best in the world, was crowned

¹ Cf. Sibbes, vol. vii., p. 603, on note s, vol. ii., p. 195.—G.

² An oversight, as the Saviour was dead before his side was pierced, John xix. 34.—G.

with thorns, and they smote him on the head. Osorius, writing of the sufferings of Christ, saith, 'That the crown of thorns bored his head with seventy-two wounds.' To see that head, before which angels cast down themselves and worshipped, as I may say, crowned with thorns, might well amaze us; to see those eyes, that were purer than the sun, put out by the darkness of death; to see those ears which hear nothing to speak to capacity, but halleluiahs of saints and angels, to hear the blasphemies of the multitude; to see that face which was fairer than the sons of men,—for being born and conceived without sin, he was freed from the contagious effects of it, deformity, and was most perfectly beautiful, Ps. xlv. 2; Cant. v. 10—to be spit on by those beastly, wretched Jews; to see that mouth and tongue, that 'spake as never man spake,' accused for false doctrines, nay blasphemy; to see those hands, which freely swayed the sceptre of heaven, nailed to the cross; to see those feet, 'like unto fine brass,' Rev. i. 15, nailed to the cross for man's sins; who can behold Christ thus suffering in all the members of his body, and not be struck with astonishment? Who can sum up the horrible abuses that were put upon Christ by his base attendants? The evangelist tells us that they spit in his face and buffeted him, and that others smote him with the palms of their hands, saying, 'Prophesy unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?' Mat. xxvi. 67, 68; and, as Luke adds, 'many other things blasphemously spake they against him,' Luke xxii. 65. What those many other things were is not discovered; only some ancient writers say, 'That Christ in that night suffered so many and such hideous things, that the whole knowledge of them is reserved only for the last day of judgment.' Mallonius¹ writes thus, 'After Caiaphas and the priests had sentenced Christ worthy of death, they committed him to their ministers, warily to keep till day, and they immediately threw him into the dungeon in Caiaphas's house; there they bound him to a stony pillar, with his hands bound on his back, and then they fell upon him with their palms and fists.' Others add that the soldiers, not yet content, they threw him into a filthy, dirty puddle, where he abode for the remainder of that night; of which the psalmist seems to speak, 'Thou hast laid me in the lowest pit, in darkness, and in the deeps, and I sink in the deep mire, where there is no standing,' Ps. lxxxviii. 6, and lxix. 2. But that you may clearly see what horrible abuses were put upon Christ by his attendants, consider seriously of these particulars:—

[1.] First, 'They spit in his face,' Mat. xxvi. 67. Now, this was accounted among the Jews a matter of great infamy and reproach: Num. xii. 14, 'And the Lord said to Moses, If her father had spit in her face, should she not be ashamed seven days?' Spitting in the face among the Jews was a sign of anger, shame, and contempt: Job xxx. 10, 'They abhor me, they flee far from me, and spare not to spit in my face.' The face is the table of beauty or comeliness, and when it is spit upon, it is made the seat of shame. Spitting in the face was a sign of the greatest disgrace that could be put upon a person; and therefore it could not but be very bitter to Job to see base beggars spit in that face that was wont to be honoured by princes. But this we are not

² Query, Maldonatus?—G.

to wonder at, for there is no indignity so base and ignominious but the choicest saints may meet with it in and from this evil world. Afflicted persons are sacred things, and by the laws of nature and nations should not be misused and trampled upon, but rather pitied and lamented over; but barbarous miscreants, when they have an opportunity, they will not spare to exercise any kind of cruelty, as you see by their spitting in the very face of Christ himself: 'I hid not my face,' saith Christ, 'from shame and spitting,' Isa. l. 6, 2. Though 'I was fairer than the children of men,' Ps. xlv. 2, yet I used no mask to keep me fair; though 'I was white and ruddy,' 'the chiefest among ten thousand,' Cant. v. 10, yet I preserved not my beauty from their nasty spittle. Oh, that that sweet and blessed face of Jesus Christ, that is so much honoured and adored in heaven, should ever be spit upon by beastly wretches in this world!

[2.] Secondly, 'They struck him:' John xviii. 22, 'One of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?' Because our Saviour gave not the high priest his usual titles, but dealt freely with him, this impious apparitor, or sergeant, to curry favour with his master, strikes him with his hand, with his rod, say some, with his stick, say others; like master like man. Oh, that that holy face which was designed to be the object of heaven, in the beholding of which much of the celestial glory doth consist—that that face which the angels stare upon with wonder, like infants at a bright sunbeam—should ever be smitten by a base varlet in the presence of a judge! Among all the sufferings of Christ, one would think that there was no great matter in this, that a vain officer did strike him with the palm of his hand; and yet if the Scriptures are consulted, you will find that the Holy Ghost lays a great stress upon it. Thus Jeremiah: 'He giveth his cheek to him that smiteth him; he is filled full with reproach,' Lam. iii. 30. Christ did patiently and willingly take the stripes that vain men did injuriously lay upon him; he sustained all kinds of vexations from the hands of all kinds of ungodly ones. Thus Micah, speaking of Christ, saith, 'They shall smite the Judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek,' Micah v. 1. Hugo, by this Judge of Israel, understandeth our Lord Jesus Christ, who was indeed at his passion contumeliously 'buffeted and smitten with rods upon the cheek,' Mat. xxvi. 67. By smiting the Judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek, they express their scorn and contempt of Christ. Smiting upon the face the apostle makes a sign of great reproach: 2 Cor. xi. 20, 'If a man smite you on the face,' 'There is nothing more disgraceful,' saith Chrysostom, 'than to be smitten on the cheek.'¹ And the diverse reading of the original word does fully evidence it: 'He struck him with a rod,' or 'he struck him with the palm of his hand,' ἔδωκε ῥάπισμα. Now, the word ῥάπισμα, say some, refers to his being struck with a rod, or club, or shoe, or plantofle;² others say it refers to his being struck with the palm of men's hands. Now, of the two, it is generally judged more disgraceful to be struck with the palm of the hand than to be struck with either a rod or a shoe; and therefore we read the text

¹ Homil. 82 in John c. 18.

² 'Plant,' = foot: plantofle = covering of foot, or a slipper.

thus, 'He struck Jesus with the palm of his hand,' that is, with open hand, or with his hand stretched out.

Some of the ancients, commenting on this cuff, say, Let the heavens be afraid, and let the earth tremble, at Christ's patience and his servant's impudence! O ye angels! how were ye silent? how could you contain your hands when you saw his hand striking at God?¹ 'If we consider him,' saith another,² 'who took the blow, was not he that struck him worthy to be consumed of fire, or to be swallowed up of earth, or to be given up to Satan, and thrown down into hell.' Bernard saith, 'That his hand that struck Christ was armed with an iron glove.'³ And Vincentius affirms, 'That by the blow Christ was felled to the earth.'⁴ And Ludovicus adds, 'That blood gushed out of his mouth; and that the impression of the varlet's fingers remained on Christ's cheek with a tumour and wan colour.'⁵ If a subject should but lift up his hand against a sovereign, would he not be severely punished? But should he strike him, would it not be present death? Oh, what desperate madness and wickedness was it then to strike the King of kings and Lord of lords, whom not only men, but the cherubims and seraphims, and all the celestial powers above, adore and worship? Rev. xvii. 16; Heb. i.⁶ Those monsters in that Mat. xxvi. 67 did not only strike Christ with the palm of their hands, but they buffeted him also. Now, some of the learned observe this difference betwixt *ῥάπισμα* and *κολαφος*; the one is given with the open hand, the other with the fist shut up; and thus they used him at this time. They struck him with their fists, and so the stroke was greater and more offensive; for by this means they made his face to swell, and to become full of bunches all over. One gives it in thus: By these blows of their fists his whole head was swollen, his face became black and blue, and his teeth ready to fall out of his jaws. Very probable it is that, with the violence of their strokes, they made him reel and stagger, they made his mouth, and nose, and face to bleed, and his eyes to startle in his head.

Now, concerning Christ's sufferings on the cross, I shall only hint a few things, and so close up this particular concerning Christ's corporeal sufferings. Take me thus,

1. *First*, The death of Christ on the cross, it was a *bitter death*, a *sorrowful death*, a *bloody death*. The bitter thoughts of his sufferings put him into a most dreadful agony: Luke xxii. 44, 'Being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat was as great drops of blood falling to the ground.' The Greek word that is here used, *Ἀγωνία*, signifies a striving or wrestling against, as two combatants or wrestlers do strive each against other. The things which our Saviour strove against was not only the terror of death, as other men are wont to do—for then many Christians and martyrs might have seemed more constant and courageous than he—but with the terrible justice of God, pouring out his high anger and indignation upon him on the account of all the sins of his chosen that were laid upon him, than which nothing could be more dreadful, Isa. liii. 4-6. Christ was

¹ Chrysostom, Hom. 81 in John c. 18.

² Augustine in Trall. 13.

³ Bernard, Ser. de Pas. Vinc. Sermon. de Pas.

⁴ Comment. in Ep. ad Ebræos. 1634, folio.—G.

⁵ Ludov. de *Vita Christi*.

in a vehement conflict in his soul, through the deepest sense of his Father's wrath against sinners, for whom he now stood as a surety and Redeemer, 2 Cor. v. 21. And for a close of this particular, let me say that God's justice which we have provoked, being fully satisfied by the inestimable merit of Christ's passion, is the surest and highest ground of consolation that we have in this world; but for the more full opening¹ of this blessed scripture, let us take notice of these following particulars:—

(1.) First, '*His sweat was as it were blood.*' Some of the ancients look upon these words only as a similitude or figurative hyperbole, it being a usual kind of speech to call a vehement sweat a bloody sweat, as he that weeps bitterly is said to weep tears of blood; but the most and best of the ancients understand the words in a literal sense, and believe it was truly and properly a bloody sweat, and with them I close. But some will object, and say it was *sicut guttæ sanguinis*, as it were drops of blood. Now to this I answer, *first*, if the Holy Ghost had only intended that *sicut* for a similitude or hyperbole, he would rather have expressed it as it were drops of water,² than 'as it were drops of blood;' for we all know that sweat is more like to water than to blood. But, *secondly*, I answer that *sicut*, as in Scripture phrase, doth not always denote a similitude, but sometimes the very thing itself, according to the verity of it. Take an instance or two instead of many: 'We beheld his glory, as the glory of the only begotten of the Father;' and 'their words seemed to them as it were idle tales, and they believed them not;' the words in the original, *ὡς, ὡσεί,* are the same. Certainly Christ's sweat in the garden was a wonderful sweat, not a sweat of water, but of red gore-blood. But,

(2.) Secondly, He sweat *great drops of blood, clotty blood*, issuing through flesh and skin in great abundance, *θρόμβοι αἵματος*, clotted or congealed blood. There is a thin faint sweat, and there is a thick clotted sweat. In this sweat of Christ blood came not from him in small dews, but in great drops, they were drops, and great drops of blood, crassy³ and thick drops. Some read it droppings down of blood; that is, blood distilling in greater and grosser drops; and hence it is concluded as preternatural; for though much may be said for sweating blood in a course of nature, according to what Aristotle affirms, and Austin saith that he knew a man that could sweat blood, even when he pleased; and it is granted on all hands that in faint bodies a subtle thin blood like sweat may pass through the pores of the skin; but that through the same pores crassy, thick, and great drops of blood should issue out,—it was not, it could not be without a miracle.⁴ Certainly the drops of blood that fell from Christ's body were great, very great; yea, so great as if they had started through his skin to outrun the streams and rivers of his cross. But,

(3.) Thirdly, These great drops of blood did not only *distillare*,⁵ drop out, but *decurrere*, run down like a stream, so fast, as if they had issued out of most deadly wounds. They were 'great drops of blood falling down to the ground'! Here is magnitude and multitude; great drops,

¹ Misprinted 'opinion.'—G.

² Misprinted 'nature.'—G.

³ 'Thick,' 'fat.'—G.

⁴ Arist. lib. iii., de Hist. Animal, c. 29; August. lib. 14, de Civit. Dei., c. 24.

⁵ Misprinted 'dillare.'—G.

and those so many, so plenteous, as that they went through his apparel, and all streamed down to the ground; and now was the time that his garments were dyed with crimson red. That of the prophet, though spoken in another sense, yet in some respect may be applied to this, 'Wherefore art thou red in thy apparel, and thy garments like him that treadeth the wine-fat?' Isa. lxiii. 2. Oh, what a sight was here! His head and members are all on a bloody sweat, and this sweat trickles down, and bedecks his garments, which stood like a new firmament, studded with stars, portending an approaching storm; nor stays it there, but it falls down to the ground. Oh, happy garden that was watered with such tears of blood! Oh, how much better are these rivers than Abana and Pharpar, rivers of Damascus, yea, than all the waters of Israel; yea, than all those rivers that water the garden of Eden!¹ So great was Scanderbeg's ardour in battle,² that the blood burst out of his lips; but from our champion's, not lips only, but whole body, burst out a bloody sweat. Not his eyes only were fountains of tears, or his head waters, as Jeremiah wished, Jer. ix. 1, but his whole body was turned, as it were, into rivers of blood. A sweet comfort to such as are cast down for that that their sorrow for sin is not so deep and soaking as they could desire.

Christ's blood is put in Scripture by a synecdoche of the part, for all the sufferings which he underwent for all the sins of the elect, especially his bloody death with all its concomitants, so called. *First*, because death, especially when it is violent, is joined with the effusion of blood: 'If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets,' Mat. xxiii. 30. And so again, Pilate said, 'I am innocent of the blood of this just person,' that is, of his death, Mat. xxvii. 24. *Secondly*, Herein respect is had to all the sacrifices of the law, whose blood was poured out when they were offered up. 'Almost all things are by the law purged with blood, and without shedding of blood there is no remission,' Heb. ix. 22; so that the blood of Christ is the antitype aimed at in the blood of those sacrifices that were slain for sinners' sins. But,

2. *Secondly*, as the death of Christ on the cross, was a bitter death, a bloody death, so the death of Christ on the cross was a *lingering death*. It was more for Christ to suffer one hour than for us to have suffered for ever; but his death was lengthened out, he hung three hours on the cross, he died many deaths before he could die one: 'from the sixth till the ninth hour'—that is, from twelve till three in the afternoon—'there was darkness over all the land,' Mat. xxvii. 45. About twelve, when the sun is usually brightest, it began now to darken, and this darkness was so great that it spread over all the land of Jewry; yea, some think over all the world. So we translate it in Luke, 'And there was darkness over all the earth,' Luke xxiii. 44, to show God's dislike of their horrid cruelty. He would not have the sun give light to so horrid an act. The sun as it were, hid his face that he might not see the Sun of righteousness so unworthily, so wickedly handled. It was dark: 1. To show the blindness, darkness, and ignorance of the Jews in crucifying the Lord of glory; 2. To show the detestation of the fact; 3. To show the vileness of our sins. This darkness was not a natural eclipse of the sun; for, first, it cannot be so total, so general;

¹ Bernard.² Bucholcer.

nor secondly, it could not be so long, for the interposed moon goeth swiftly away. Certainly this was no ordinary eclipse of the sun, seeing the passover was kept at the full moon, when the moon stands right opposite to the sun on the other side of the heaven, and for this cause cannot hinder the light of the sun, but a supernatural work of God coming to pass by miracle, 'like as the darkness in Egypt,' *Exod. x. 22.* The moon being now in the full, it being in the midst of the lunar month when the passover was killed, and so of necessity the body of the moon—which useth to eclipse the sun by its interposition, and being between us and the sun—must be opposite to and distant from the sun the diametrical breadth of the hemisphere, the full moon ever rising at the sun's setting, and therefore this eclipse could never be a natural eclipse. Many Gentiles besides Jews observed this darkness as a great miracle. Dionysius the Areopagite, as Suidas relates, could say at first sight of it, 'Either the world is ending, or the God of nature is suffering of this darkness.'¹ Amos long before had prophesied: 'And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will cause the sun to go down at noon, and I will darken the earth in the clear day,' *Amos viii. 9.* The opinion of authors concerning the cause of this darkness are various. Some think that the sun by divine power, withdrew and held back its beams; others say that the obscurity was caused by some thick clouds which were miraculously produced in the air, and spread themselves over all the earth; others say that this darkness was by a wonderful interposition of the moon, which at that time was at full, but by a miracle interposed itself betwixt the earth and sun. Whatsoever was the cause of this darkness, it is certain that it continued for the space of three hours as dark as the darkest winter nights.

About three, which the Jews call the ninth hour, *Mat. xxvii. 46,* the sun now beginning to receive his light, Jesus cried with a loud voice, 'Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' And then, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, he said 'I thirst;' and when he had received the vinegar, he said, 'It is finished,' *John xix. 28, 30;* and at last, crying with a loud voice, he said, 'Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit;' and having said thus, 'he gave up the ghost,' *Luke xxiii. 46.* Christ's words were ever gracious, but never more gracious than at this time. You cannot find in all the books and writings of men, in all the annals and records of time, either such sufferings or such sayings as were these last words and wounds, sayings and sufferings of Jesus Christ. 'And having said thus, he gave up the ghost;' or as John relates it, 'He bowed his head and gave up the ghost,' *John xix. 30.* Christ would not off the cross till all was done that was here to be done.² Christ bowed not because he was dead, but first he bowed and then died; that is, he died freely and willingly without constraint, and he died cheerfully and comfortably without murmuring or repining. Oh, what a wonder of love is this, that Jesus Christ, who is the author of life, the fountain of life, the lord of life, that he should so freely, so readily, so cheerfully lay down his life for us! &c.

About four in the afternoon he was pierced with a spear, and there issued out of his side both blood and water: 'and one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there-out blood and

¹ Suidas in vita Dion.

² *Emisit, non amisit.*—Ambrose.

water,' John xix. 34. Out of the side of Christ, being now dead, there issues water and blood, signifying that he is both our justification and sanctification.

Thus was fulfilled that which was long before foretold: 'They shall look upon me whom they have pierced,' Zech. xii. 10; thus 'came Jesus by water and by blood,' 1 John v. 6; thus was there 'a fountain opened to the house of David, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem,' even to all the elect, 'for sin and for uncleanness,' Zech. xiii. 1. The soldier's malice lived when Christ was dead. The water and blood forthwith issuing out as soon as it was pierced with a spear, did evidently show that he was truly dead. The Syriac paraphrase saith he pierced his rib, that is, the fifth rib, where the *pericardium* lay. It is very likely that the very *pericardium* was pierced. Now the *pericardium* is a film or skin, like unto a purse, wherein is contained clear water to cool the heat of the heart.¹ The blood, saith one,² signifies the perfect expiation of the sins of the Church, and the water, the daily washing and purging of it from the remainder of her corruption. 'Water and blood issued out of Christ's side,' saith another, 'to teach us that Christ justifieth none by his merit, but such whom he sanctifieth by his Spirit.' Christ was pierced with a spear, and water and blood presently issued out of his side, that his enemies might not object that he rose again because he was but half dead on the cross, and being so taken down he revived. To testify the contrary truth, John so seriously affirmeth the certainty of his death, he being an eye-witness of the streaming out of Christ's blood as he stood by Christ's cross. O gates of heaven! O windows of paradise! O palace of refuge! O tower of strength! O sanctuary of the just! O flourishing bed of the spouse of Solomon! Methinks I see water and blood running out of his side more freshly than these golden streams which ran out of the garden of Eden and watered the whole world. But here I may not dwell, &c.

But to shut up this particular, about five, which the Jews call the eleventh and the last hour of the day, Christ was taken down and buried by Joseph and Nicodemus. But,

3. *Thirdly*, As the death of Christ on the cross was a lingering death, so the death of Christ was a *painful death*. This appears several ways.

[1.] *First*, His legs and hands were violently racked and pulled out to the places fitted for his fastenings, and then pierced through with nails. His hands and feet were nailed, which parts being full of sinews, and therefore very tender, his pains could not but be very acute and sharp.

[2.] *Secondly*, By this means he wanted the use both of his hands and feet, and so he was forced to hang immovable upon the cross, as being unable to turn any way for his ease, and therefore he could not but be under very dolorous pains.

[3.] *Thirdly*, The longer he lived, the more he endured; for by the weight of his body his wounds were opened and enlarged, his nerves and veins were rent and torn asunder, and his blood gushed out more

¹ The whole subject is conclusively discussed by Dr Stroud in his 'Physical Cause of Christ's Death,' 1 vol. 8vo. 1847. And cf. the interesting correspondence of eminent medical men in Appendix to Dr Hanna's 'Last Day of our Lord's Passion.' 1862. — G.

² Ambrose on Luke.

and more abundantly still. Now the envenomed arrows of God's wrath shot to his heart. This was the direful catastrophe, and caused that vociferation and outcry upon the cross, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' The justice of God was now inflamed and heightened to its full ἀκμή: Rom. viii. 32, 'God spared not his Son;' God would not abate one farthing of the debt. But,

[4.] *Fourthly*, He died by piece-meals, he died by little and little, he died not all at once. He that died on the cross was long a-dying. Christ was kept a great while upon the rack; it was full three hours betwixt his affixion and expiration; and certainly it would have been longer if he had not freely and willingly given up the ghost. I have read that Andrew the apostle was two whole days on the cross before he died; and so long might Christ have been a-dying, if God had not supernaturally heightened the degrees of his torment. Doubtless when Christ was on the cross he felt the very pains of hell, though not locally, yet equivalently. But,

4. *Fourthly*, As the death of Christ on the cross was a painful death, so the death of Christ on the cross was a *shameful death*. Christ was *in medio positus*, he hung between two thieves, as if he had been the principal malefactor, Mark xxvii. 38. Here they placed him to make the world believe that he was the great ringleader of such men. Christ was crucified in the midst as the chief of sinners that we might have place in the midst of heavenly angels; the one of these thieves went railing to hell, the other went repenting forth right to heaven, living long in a little time, Zech. iii. 7.

If you ask me the names of these two thieves who were crucified with Christ, I must answer, that although the Scripture nominates them not, yet some writers give them these names, Dismas and Gesmas; Dismas the happy, and Gesmas the miserable thief, according to the poet—

Gesmas damnatur, Dismas ad astra levatur :

that is,

When Gesmas died, to Dives he was sent ;
When Dismas died, to Abraham up he went.¹

Well might the lamp of heaven withdraw its light and mask itself with darkness, as blushing to behold the Sun of righteousness hanging between two thieves! He shall be an Apollo to me that can tell me which was the greater, the blood of the cross, or the shame of the cross, Heb. xii. 2. It was a mighty shame that Saul's sons were hanged on a tree, 2 Sam. xxi. 6. Oh, what a shameful death was it for Christ to hang on a tree between two notorious thieves! But,

5. *Fifthly* and lastly, As the death of Christ was a shameful death, so the death of Christ was a cursed death; 'Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree,' Deut. xxi. 23. The death on the tree was accursed above all kinds of death; 'as the serpent was accursed above all beasts of the field,' Gen. iii. 14, both for the first transgression, whereof the serpent was the instrument, the tree the occasion. Since the death of any malefactor might be a monument of God's curse for sin, it may be questioned, why this brand is peculiarly set

¹ Rather Demas, and Gestas, *not* Gesmas. Evangel. Nicod. i. 10; Narrat. Joseph, c. 3.—G.

upon this kind of punishment ; that he that is hanged is accursed of God. To which I answer, that the reason of this was, because this was esteemed the most shameful, the most dishonourable and infamous of all kinds of death, and was usually therefore the punishment of those that had by some notorious wickedness provoked God to pour out his wrath upon the whole land, and so were hanged up to appease his wrath, as we may see in the hanging of those princes that were guilty of committing whoredom with the daughters of Moab, Num. xxv. 4 ; and in the hanging of those sons of Saul in the days of David, when there was a famine in the land, because of Saul's perfidious oppressing of the Gibeonites, 2 Sam. xxi. 6. Nor was it without cause that this kind of death was both by the Israelites and other nations esteemed the most shameful and accursed ; because the very manner of the death did intimate that such men as were thus executed were such execrable and accursed wretches, that they did defile the earth with treading upon it, and would pollute the earth if they should die upon it ; and therefore were so trussed up in the air as not fit to live amongst men ; and that others might look upon them as men made spectacles of God's indignation and curse, because of the wickedness they had committed, which was not done in other kinds of death. And hence it was that the Lord God would have his Son, the Lord Christ, to suffer this kind of death, that even hence it might be the more evident, that in his death he bare the curse due to our sins, according to that of the apostle : ' Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us ; for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree,' Gal. iii. 13. The Chaldee translateth, ' For because he sinned before the Lord he is hanged.' The tree whereon a man was hanged, the stone wherewith he was stoned, the sword wherewith he was beheaded, and the napkin wherewith he was strangled, they were all buried, that there might be no evil memorial of such a one, to say, This was the tree, sword, stone, napkin, wherewith such a one was executed. This kind of death was so execrable that Constantine made a law that no Christian should die upon the cross ; he abolished this kind of death out of his empire. When this kind of death was in use among the Jews, it was chiefly inflicted upon slaves, that either falsely accused, or treacherously conspired their master's death. But on whomsoever it was inflicted, this death in all ages among the Jews had been branded with a special kind of ignominy ; and so much the apostle signifies when he saith, ' He abased himself to the death, even to the death of the cross,' Phil. ii. 2. I know Moses' law speaks nothing in particular of crucifying, yet he doth include the same under the general of hanging on a tree ; and some conceive that Moses, in speaking of that curse, foresaw what manner of death the Lord Jesus should die. And let thus much suffice concerning Christ's sufferings on the cross, or concerning his corporeal sufferings.

II. I shall now, in the second place, speak concerning Christ's *spiritual sufferings*, his sufferings in his soul, which were exceeding high and great. Now here I shall endeavour to do two things : First, To prove that Christ suffered in his soul, and so much the rather because that the papists say and write, that Christ did not truly and properly and immediately suffer in his soul, but only by way of sympathy and

compassion with his body to the mystical body; and that his bare bodily sufferings were sufficient for man's redemption. Second, That the sufferings of Christ in his soul were exceeding high and great. For the first, that Christ suffered in his soul, I shall thus demonstrate.

(1.) First, *Express Scriptures do evidence this*: Isa. liii. 10, 'When thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed,' &c.; John xii. 27, 'Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour;' Mat. xxvi. 37, 38, 'He began to be sorrowful and very heavy.' These were but the beginnings of sorrow: he began, &c. Sorrow is a thing that drinks up our spirits, and he was heavy, as feeling a heavy load upon him; ver. 38, 'My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death.' Christ was as full of sorrow as his heart could hold. Every word is emphatical, 'My soul;' his sorrow pierced his heaven-born soul. As the soul was the first agent in transgression, so it is here the first patient in affliction. The sufferings of his body were but the body of his sufferings; the soul of his sufferings were the sufferings of his soul, which was now beset with sorrows, and heavy as heart could hold.¹ Christ was sorrowful, his soul was sorrowful, his soul was exceeding sorrowful, his soul was exceeding sorrowful unto death. Christ's soul was in such extremity of sorrow, that it made him cry out, 'Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass;' and this was with 'strong cryings and tears,' Heb. v. 7. To cry, and to cry with a loud voice, argues great extremity of sufferings: Mark xiv. 33, Mark saith, 'And he began to be amazed, and to be very heavy;' or we may more fully express it thus, according to the original, *καὶ ἤρξατο ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι, καὶ ἀδημονεῖν*, 'He begun to be gasted² with wonderful astonishment, and to be satiated, filled brimful with heaviness: a very sad condition! All the sins of the elect, like a huge army, meeting upon Christ, made a dreadful onset on his soul: Luke xxii. 43, 44, it is said 'He was in an agony.' That is a conflict in which a poor creature wrestles with deadly pangs, with all his might, mustering up all his faculties and force to grapple with them and withstand them. Thus did Christ struggle with the indignation of the Lord, praying once and again with more intense fervency, 'Oh, that this cup may pass away; if it be possible, let this cup pass away!' Luke xxii. 42, 43; while yet an angel strengthened his outward man from utter sinking in the conflict. Now, if this weight that Christ did bear had been laid on the shoulders of all the angels in heaven, it would have sunk them down to the lowest hell; it would have cracked the axle-tree of heaven and earth. It made his blood startle out of his body in congealed cloddered³ heaps. The heat of God's fiery indignation made his blood to boil up till it ran over; yea, divine wrath affrighted it out of its wonted channel. The creation of the world cost him but a word; he spake and the world was made; but the redemption of souls cost him bloody sweats and soul-distraction. What conflicts, what strugglings with the wrath of God! the powers of darkness! what weights! what burdens! what wrath did he undergo when his soul was heavy unto death! 'beset with terrors,' as

¹ Christ's soul was beleaguered, or compassed round, round with sorrow, as that word *περίλωπος* sounds.

² 'Terrified.'—G.

³ 'Coagulated.'—G.

the word implies, when he drank that bitter cup, that cup of bitterness, that cup mingled with curses, which made him sweat drops of blood ! which, if men or angels had but sipped of, it would have made them reel, stagger, and tumble into hell. The soul of Christ was overcast with a cloud of God's displeasure. The Greek Church, speaking of the sufferings of Christ, calls them *ἀγνωστα παθήματα*, 'unknown sufferings.' Ah Christians ! who can speak out this sorrow ? 'The spirit of a man will sustain his infirmity ; but a wounded spirit who can bear ?' Prov. xviii. 14. Christ's soul is sorrowful ; but give me that word again, his soul is exceeding sorrowful ; but if that word be yet too low, then I must tell you that 'his soul was exceeding sorrowful, even unto death : ' not only extensively, such as must continue for the space of seventeen or eighteen hours, even until death itself should finish it, but also intensively such, and so great as that which is used to be at the very point of death, and such as were able to bring death itself, had not Christ been reserved to a greater and heavier punishment. Of this sorrow is that especially spoken, 'Behold and see if there be any sorrow like unto my sorrow which is done unto me, wherewith the Lord hath afflicted me in the day of his fierce anger,' Lam. i. 12. Many a sad and sorrowful soul hath, no question, been in the world ; but the like sorrow to this was never since the creation. The very terms or phrases used by the evangelists speak no less. He was 'sorrowful and heavy,' saith one ; 'amazed, and very heavy,' saith another ; 'in an agony,' saith a third ; 'in a soul-trouble,' saith a fourth. Certainly, the bodily torments of the cross were much inferior to the agony of his soul. The pain of the body is the body of pain. Oh, but the very soul of sorrow is the soul's sorrow, and the very soul of pain is the soul's pain.

(2.) Secondly, *That which Christ assumed or took of our nature, he assumed to this end, to suffer in it ; and by suffering, to save and redeem it.* But he took the whole nature of man, both body and soul ; *ergo*, he suffered in both. First, the assumption is evident, and needs no proof ; that Christ took upon him both our soul and body, the apostle assures us, where he saith, 'That in all things it became him to be like unto us,' Heb. ii. 17 ; therefore he had both body and soul as we have. Secondly, concerning the proposition, viz., 'That what Christ took of our nature, he took it by suffering in it properly and immediately to redeem us.' Now this is evident by that blessed word, where the apostle saith, 'Christ took part with them that he might destroy, through death, him that had the power of death, that is, the devil,' ver. 14, 15 ; 'and deliver them, who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.' Hence I reason thus, that wherein Christ delivered us, he took part with us in ; but he delivered us from fear of death ; *ergo*, he did therein communicate with us. Now mark, this fear was the proper and immediate passion of the soul, namely, the fear of death and God's anger. And the text giveth this sense, 'Because the fear of this death kept them in bondage, but the fear only of the bodily death doth not bring us into such bondage ; witness that Song of Zacharias ; 'That we, being delivered from the hands of our enemies, should serve him without fear,' Luke i. 74. This then is a spiritual fear, from the which Christ did deliver us ;

ergo, He did communicate with us in this fear; for the apostle saith, 'In that wherein he suffered, and was tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted,' Heb. ii. 18. Certainly that fear which fell on Christ was a real fear, and it was in his soul, and did not arise from the mere contemplation of bodily torments only, for the very martyrs in the encountering with them have feared little. Assuredly there was some great matter that lay upon the very soul of Christ, which made him so heavy, and sorrowful, and so afraid, and in such an agony.

But if you please, take this second argument in another form of words, thus: *what Christ took of ours, that he in suffering offered up for us*, for his assuming of our nature, was for this end, to suffer for us in our nature; but he took our nature in body and in soul, and he delivered our souls as well as our bodies; and the sins of our souls did need his sacrifice as well as the sins of our bodies; and our souls were crucified with Christ as well as our bodies. *Mens mea in Christo crucifixæ est*, saith Ambrose. Surely if our whole man was lost, then our whole man did need the benefit and help of a whole Saviour; and if Christ had assumed only our flesh, our body, then our souls adjudged, adjudged to punishment, had remained under transgression without hope of pardon. Several sayings of the ancients doth further strengthen this argument. Take a taste of some. *Si totus homo perit, totus beneficio salvatoris indiguit*, &c. If the whole man perished, the whole man needed a Saviour.¹ Christ therefore took the whole man, body and soul. If he had taken only flesh, the soul should remain addict to punishment of the first transgression, without hope of pardon. By the same reason, Christ must also suffer properly in soul, because not by taking our soul, but by satisfying in his soul, our soul is delivered.

'*Suscipit animam meam, suscepit corpus meum*,' [saith] Ambrose, 'He took all our passions, or affections, to sanctify them all in himself; but Christ was sanctified and consecrated by his death, and so doth he consecrate us,' [saith] Damascene. 'For by one offering, he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified, Heb. x. 14; *ergo*, by his offering of our soul, and suffering in our soul, hath he consecrated our soul and affections.

Suscipit affectum meum, ut emendaret, He took my affection to amend it, &c. Now he hath amended it, in that he consecrated it by his offering, Heb. x. 14; *Illud pro nobis suscepit, quod in nobis amplius periclitabatur*. He hath taken that for us, which was most in danger for us, &c., that is, our soul as he expoundeth it: [Damascene] *de Incarnatione*, c. 7. But Christ hath not otherwise delivered us from the danger, but by entering into the danger for us; this danger of the soul is the fear and feeling of God's wrath.

(3.) Thirdly, *Christ bore our sorrows*, Isa. liii. 4. Now what sorrows should we bear, but the sorrows due unto us for our sins; and surely these were not corporal only, but spiritual also, and those did Christ bear in his soul. The same prophet saith, ver. 10, 'He shall make his soul an offering for sin;' *ergo*, Christ offered his soul as well as his body. Again, our Saviour himself saith, 'My soul is very heavy unto death,' Mat. xxvi. 38. Certainly it was not the bodily death which Christ feared, for then he should have been weaker than

¹ Augustine Conf.: Felician., c. 13.

many martyrs, yea, than many of the Romans, who made no more of dying, than of dining; therefore Christ's soul was verily and properly stricken with heaviness, and not with the beholding of bodily torments only, as some dream. But,

(4.) Fourthly, *That whereby Adam and we ever since, do most properly commit sin, by the same hath Christ, the second Adam, made satisfaction properly for our sin*; but Adam did, and we all do properly commit sin in our souls, our bodies being but the instruments; ergo, Christ by, and in his soul, hath properly made satisfaction.

[1.] First, *The truth of the proposition is confirmed by the apostle*, 'As by one man's disobedience we are made sinners, so by the obedience of one many shall be made righteous,' Rom. v. 19. Christ then satisfied for us by the same wherein Adam disobeyed. Now Adam's soul was in the transgression as well as his body, and accordingly was Christ's very soul in his sufferings and satisfaction, and Christ obeyed, that is, in his soul; for obedience belongeth to the soul, as one observeth upon those words of the apostle: Phil. ii. 8, 'He became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross: who doth not understand,' saith the same author, 'that obedience doth belong to the human will?'¹

That there is a kind of dying in the soul when it is pierced with grief, besides the death of the soul, either by sin or damnation, is not disagreeing to the Scripture. Simeon saith to Mary, 'A sword shall pierce through thy soul,' Luke ii. 35. Look as then the body dieth, being pierced with a sword, so the soul may be said to die or languish, when it is pierced with grief. What else is crucifying but dying? Now, the soul is said to be crucified, as is evident by that passage of the apostle, 'I am crucified to the world,' Gal. vi. 14, when as yet his body was alive. So Ambrose doubts not to say, *Mens mea in Christo crucifixæ est*, My soul was crucified in Christ, that is, Christ in his soul was crucified, which he calleth our soul, because he did assume our soul and body;² or else where he saith, *Mea est voluntas, quam suam dixit*, &c. It is my will, which he calleth his; it is my heaviness, which he took with my affections; yet was it properly and personally Christ's soul and will, but ours by community of nature.³

[2.] Secondly, *For the assumption*. 1. Howsoever it be admitted that the body is the instrument of the soul, both in sinning and suffering, yet the conclusion is this, that because sin is committed in the soul principally and properly, therefore the satisfaction must be made in the soul principally and properly. If this conclusion be granted, we have that we would; for the bodily pains affecting the soul are not the proper passions of the soul, neither is the soul said to suffer properly, when the body suffereth, but by way of compassion and consent. 2. We grant that in the proper and immediate sufferings of the soul the body also is affected: as when Christ was in his agony in the garden, his whole body was therewith stirred and moved, and that it did sweat drops of blood. But it is one thing when the grief becometh immediately in the soul and so affecteth the body, and when the pain is first inflicted upon the body and so worketh upon the soul,

¹ Agatho Epist. ad Constantin. upon Phil. ii. 8.

² Ambrose, lib. v. in Luc.

³ Ambrose, lib. ii., de sid. c. 3.

there the soul suffereth properly and principally ; of which sufferings we speak here neither properly nor principally, which is not the thing in question. 3. It is not the reasonable soul that is affected with the body, for it is a ground in philosophy that the soul suffereth not, but only the sensitive part. But the grief that we speak of, that is satisfactory for sin, must be in the very reasonable soul where sin took the beginning, and so Ambrose saith¹ upon those words of Christ, 'My soul is heavy to death,' *Ad rationabilis assumptionem animæ, &c., nature humane refertur affectum*, It is referred to the assumption of the reasonable soul, and human affection.

Pride, ambition, infidelity began in Adam's soul, and had their determination there. In the committing of those sins the body had no part. Indeed with the ear they heard the suggestion of Satan ; but it was no sin till in their minds they had consented unto it. Wherefore seeing the first sin committed was properly and wholly in the soul, for the same the soul must properly and wholly satisfy.

Because sin took beginning from Adam's soul, the satisfaction also must begin in Christ's soul, as Ambrose saith,² *Incipio in Christo vincere, unde in Adam victus sum*, I begin there to win in Christ, where in Adam I was overcome. Then it followeth that the sufferings of Christ's soul took beginning there, and were not derived by sympathy from the stripes and pain of the body. We infer, then, that therefore Christ's soul had proper and immediate sufferings, besides those which proceeded from sympathy with his body, and all Christ's sufferings were satisfactory : *ergo*, Christ did satisfy for our sins properly and immediately in his soul.

But if you please, take this fourth argument in another form of words, thus, *The punishment which was pronounced against the first Adam, our first surety, and in him against us, that same did Christ, the second Adam, our next and best surety, bear for us, or else it must still lie upon us to suffer it. But the punishment threatened and denounced against Adam for transgression, was not only corporal, respecting our bodies, but spiritual also, respecting our souls.* There was a spiritual malediction due unto our souls, as well as a corporal, &c.

Look, as God put a sanction on the law and covenant of works made with all of us in Adam, that he and his should be liable to death, both of body and soul, which covenant being broken by sin, all sinners became obnoxious to the death both of body and soul, so it was necessary that the redeemed should be delivered from the death of both by the Redeemer's tasting of death in both kinds, as much as should be sufficient for their redemption. O sirs, as sin infected the whole man, soul and body, and the curse following on sin left no part nor power of the man's soul free ; so justice required that the Redeemer, coming in the room of the persons redeemed, should feel the force of the curse both in body and soul. But,

(5.) Fifthly, 'He shall see of the travail of his soul,' Isa. liii. 11. Here the soul is taken properly, and the travail of Christ's soul is his sufferings ; for it follows, 'and he shall bear their iniquities.' But,

(6.) Sixthly, Christ gave himself for his people's sins : 'Who gave

¹ Ambrose de Incarnat., cap. 7.

² Ambrose, lib. iv. in Luc.

himself for our sins,' Tit. ii. 14; 'Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquities,' &c., Eph. v. 25; 1 Tim. ii. 6. But the body only is not himself; *ergo*, the apostle saith, Phil. ii. 7, *Christus êkένωσε, exinanivit*, Christ did empty or evacuate himself; or, as Tertullian expounds it,¹ *exhaustit*; he drew out himself, or was exhaust, which agrees with the prophecy of Daniel, chap. ix. 26, 'Messias shall have nothing, being brought to nothing by his death, without life, strength, esteem, honour,' &c. Hence we conclude that if Christ were exhaust upon the cross, if nothing was left him, that he suffered in body and soul, that there was no part within or without free from the cross, but all was emptied and poured out for our redemption.

Again, we read that Christ, 'through the eternal Spirit, offered himself to God,' Heb. ix. 14. Whatsoever was in Christ did either offer or was offered; his eternal Spirit only did offer; *ergo*, his whole human nature, both body and soul, was offered. Thus Origen witnesseth in these words, *Vide quomodo verus pontifex Jesus Christus, adsumpto batillo carnis humanæ, &c.*²—See how our true priest, Jesus Christ, taking the censer of his human flesh, putting to the fire of the altar—that is, his magnificent soul, wherewith he was born in the flesh—and adding incense—that is, an immaculate spirit—stood in the midst between the living and the dead. Thus you see that he makes Christ's soul a part in the sacrifice.

(7.) Seventhly and lastly, *Christ's love unto man, in suffering for him, was in the highest degree and greatest measure that could be*; as the Lord saith, 'What could I have done any more for my vineyard that I have not done unto it?' But if Christ had given his body only, and not his soul for us, he had not done for us all he could, and so his love should have been greatly impaired and diminished; *ergo*, he gave his soul also, together with his body, to be the full price of our redemption. And certainly the travail and labour of Christ's soul was most acceptable unto God: 'Therefore I will give him a portion with the great, because he hath poured out his soul unto death,' &c., 'and bare the sins of many,' Isa. liii. 12. Doubtless the sufferings of Christ in his soul, together with his body, doth most fully and amply commend and set forth God's great love to poor sinners. Before I close up this particular, take a few testimonies of the fathers, which do witness with us for the sufferings of Christ, both in soul and body.

Christ hath taken off³ us that which he should offer as proper for us, to redeem us; and whatsoever Christ took off³ us, he offered; *ergo*, he offered body and soul, for he took both.⁴

Another upon these words, 'My soul is heavy,' saith, '*Anima passionibus obnoxia, divinitas libera*,' His soul was subject to passions, his divinity was free, &c.⁵ If nothing were free but his divine nature, then his soul was subject to the proper and immediate passions thereof.

*Perspicuum est, sicut corpus flagellatum, ita animam verè doluisse, &c.*⁶—It is evident that as his body was whipped, so his soul was verily

¹ Tertullian, *Contra Marcian.*, lib. v.

³ Qu. 'of'?—Ed.

⁵ Concil. *Hispalens.*, ii. c. 13.

² Origen, *Hom.* 9 in *Levit.*

⁴ Ambrose de *Incarnat.*, c. 6.

⁶ Jerome in 53d cap. *Isaiah.*

and truly grieved, lest some part of Christ's suffering should be true, some part false; *ergo*, Christ's soul as properly and truly suffered as his body. The soul had her proper grief, as the body had whipping; the whipping, then, of the body was not the proper grief of the soul. Whole Christ gave himself, and whole Christ offered himself; *ergo*, he offered his soul, not only to suffer by way of compassion with his body, as it may be answered, but he offered it as a sacrifice, and suffered all passions whatsoever incident to the soul. The same author expounds himself further thus: 'Because this God took whole man, therefore he shewed in truth in himself the passions of whole man; and having a reasonable soul, what infirmities soever of the soul without sin he took and bare.¹ If Christ, then, did take and bear all the passions of the soul without sin, then the proper and immediate grief and anguish thereof, and not the compassion only with the body. To these let me add the consent of the Reformed churches:² 'Christ did suffer both in body and soul, and was made like unto us in all things, sin only excepted.'

Thomas [Aquinas] granteth that Christ, *secundum genus, passus est omnem passionem humanam*, in general, suffered all human sufferings, as in his soul heaviness, fear, &c.³

Now the testimonies of the fathers, and the consent of the Reformed churches, affirming the same, that Christ was crucified in his soul, and that he gave his soul a price of redemption for our souls. . . . Who can then doubt of this, but that Christ verily, properly, immediately suffered in his soul, in all the proper passions thereof, as he endured pains and torments in his flesh; and if you please, this may go for an eighth argument to prove that Christ suffered in his soul.

2. Secondly, That the sufferings of Christ in his soul were *very high, and great, and wonderful, both as to the punishment of loss, and as to the punishment of sense*; all which I shall make evident in these four particulars:

[1.] First, *That Jesus Christ did suffer dereliction of God really; that he was indeed deserted and forsaken of God is most evident*: Mat. xxvii. 46, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' But to prevent mistakes in this high point, seriously consider, 1. That I do not mean that there was any such desertion of Christ by God as did dissolve the union of the natures in the person of Christ.⁴ For Christ in all his sufferings still remained God and man. Nor, 2, do I mean an absolute desertion in respect of the presence of God. For God was still present with Christ in all his sufferings, and the Godhead did support his humanity in and under his sufferings. But that which I mean is this—that as to the sensible and comforting manifestations of God's presence, thus he was for a time left and forsaken of God. God for a time had taken away all sensible consolation and felt joy from Christ's human soul, that so divine justice might in his sufferings be the more fully satisfied. In this desertion, Christ is not to be looked upon simply as he is in his own person, the Son of

¹ Fulgentius ad Thrasimund., lib. iii.

² French Confess. Harm., p. 99, § 6.

³ 3 par., qu. 46, artic. 5.

⁴ Forsaken, 1. By denying of protection; 2. By withdrawing of solace: *Non solvit unionem, sed subtraxit visionem*, The union was not dissolved, but the beams, the influence was restrained.—*Leo*.

the Father, Mat. iii. 17, in whom he is always well pleased, Mark i. 11, but as he standeth in the room of sinners, surety and cautioner, paying their debt; in which respect it concerned Christ to be dealt with as one standing in our stead, as one guilty, and paying the debt of being forsaken of God, which we were bound to suffer fully and for ever, if he had not interposed for us. There is between Christ and God, 1. An eternal union natural of the person; 2. Of the Godhead and manhood; 3. Of grace and protection. In this last sense, he means forsaken according to his feeling. Hence he said not, My Father, my Father, but, My God, my God; which words are not words of complaining, but words expressing his grief and sorrow. Our Lord Christ was forsaken, not only of all creature comforts, but that which was worse than all, of his Father's favour, to his present apprehension, left forlorn and destitute for a time, that we might be received for ever. Christ was for a time left and forsaken of God, as David, who in this particular was a type of Christ's suffering, cried out, Ps. xxii. 1, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? why art thou so far from my help?' He was indeed really forsaken of God; God did indeed leave him in respect of his sense and feeling.¹ So was Christ truly and really forsaken of God, and not in colour or show, as some affirm. Athanasius, speaking of God's forsaking of Christ, saith, 'All things were done naturally and in truth, not in opinion or show.'² Though God did still continue a God to David, yet in David's apprehension and feeling he was forsaken of God. Though God was still a God to Christ, yet as to his feeling he was left of God, to wrestle with God, and to bear the wrath of God, due unto us. Look, as Christ was scourged, that we might not be scourged, so Christ was forsaken, that we might not be forsaken. Christ was forsaken for a time, that we might not be forsaken for ever [Ambrose].

Fevardentius absolutely denies that Christ did truly complain upon the cross that he was forsaken of God; and therefore he thus objecteth and reasoneth: 'If Christ were truly forsaken of God, it would follow that the hypostatical union was dissolved, and that Christ was personally separated from God, for otherwise he could not be forsaken.'³

To what he objects we thus reply, *first*, If Christ had been totally and eternally forsaken, the personal union must have been dissolved; but upon this temporal and partial rejection or dereliction there followeth not a personal dissolution, or general dereliction. But *secondly*, As the body of Christ, being without life, was still hypostatically united to the Godhead, so was the soul of Christ, though for a time without feeling of his favour. The dereliction of the one doth no more dissolve the hypostatical union than the death of the other. If life went from the body, and yet the deity was not separated in the personal consecration, but only suspended in operation, so the feeling of God's favour, which is the life of the soul, might be intermitted in Christ, and yet the divine union not dissolved. *Thirdly*, Augustine doth well shew

¹ 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me.' Christ spake these words that thereby he might draw the Jews to a serious consideration and animadversion of his death and passion, which he underwent, not for his own but for our sins.—*Pet. Gal.*, lib. viii. c. 18, p. 343. [Pet. Galesinus.—G.]

² Relinquit Deus dum non relinquit, saith Tertullian.

³ Fevarden., p. 473, confut 1. [Franciscus Fevardentius.—G.]

how this may be when he saith, *Passio Christi dulcis fuit divinitatis somnus*,¹—That the passion of Christ was the sweet sleep of his divinity; like as when in sleep the soul is not departed, though the operation thereof be deferred; so in Christ's sleep upon the cross the Godhead was not separated, though the working power thereof were for a time sequestered. Look, as the elect members of Christ may be forsaken, though not totally or finally, but *ex parte*, in part and for a time, and yet their election remain firm still; the same may be the case of our head, that he was *ex parte derelictus*, only in part forsaken, and for a time, always beloved for his own innocency, but for us and in our person, as our pledge and surety, deserted.

There are two kinds of dereliction or forsaking; one is for a time and in part; so the elect may be, and so Christ was forsaken upon the cross: another which is total, final, and general; and so neither Christ nor his members never was nor never shall be forsaken. Christ, in the deepest anguish of his soul, is upheld and sustained by his faith, 'My God, my God,' whereby he sheweth his singular confidence and trust in God, notwithstanding the present sense of his wrath.

Quest. But how can Christ be forsaken of God, himself being God; for the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost are all three but one and the same God? Yea, how can he be forsaken of God, seeing he is the Son of God? and if the Lord leave not his children, which hope and trust in him, how can he forsake Christ, his only-begotten Son, who depended upon him and his mighty power?

Ans. 1. First, By God here we are to understand God the Father, the first person of the blessed Trinity. According to the vulgar and common rule, when God is compared with the Son or Holy Ghost, then the Father is meant by this title God; not that the Father is more God than the Son—for in dignity all the three persons are equal—but they are distinguished in order only; and thus the Father is the first person, the Son the second, and the Holy Ghost the third.

Ans. 2. Secondly, Our Saviour's complaint, that he was forsaken, must be understood in regard of his human nature, and not of his Godhead; although the Godhead and manhood were never severed from the first time of his incarnation; but the Godhead of Christ, and so the Godhead of the Father, did not shew forth his power in his manhood, but did as it were lie asleep for a time, that the manhood might suffer.

Ans. 3. Thirdly, Christ was not indeed utterly forsaken of God in regard of his human nature, but only as it were forsaken—that is, although there were some few minutes and moments in which he received no sensible consolations from the Deity, yet that he was not utterly forsaken is most clear from this place, where he flees unto the Lord as unto his God, 'My God, my God,' as also from his resurrection the third day.

Ans. 4. Fourthly, Divines say that there are six kinds of dereliction or forsakings:—1. By disunion of person; and 2. By loss of grace; and 3. By diminution and weakenings of grace; and 4. By want of assurance of future deliverance and present support; and 5. By denial of protection; and 6. By withdrawing of all solace and

¹ August., lib de essen. divin.

comfort. Now it is foolish and impious to think that Christ was forsaken any of the first four ways, for the unity of his person was never dissolved, his graces were never either taken away or diminished, neither was it possible that he should want assurance of future deliverance and present support that was eternal God and Lord of life; but the two last ways he may rightly be said to have been forsaken, in that his Father denied to protect and keep him out of the hands of his cruel, bloody, and merciless enemies, no ways restraining them, but suffering them to do the uttermost that their wicked hearts could imagine, and left him to endure the extremity of their fury and malice; and, that nothing might be wanting to make his sorrows beyond measure sorrowful, withdrew from him that solace and comfort that he was wont to find in God, and removed far from him all things for a little time that might any way lessen and assuage the extremity of his pain.

[2.] Secondly, *That Jesus Christ did feel and suffer the wrath of God which was due unto us for our sins.* The prophet Isaiah, chap. liii. 4, saith, 'That he was plagued and smitten of God'; and ver. 5, 'The chastisement of our peace was upon him.' To be plagued and smitten of God is to feel and suffer the stroke of his wrath; and so to be chastised of God, as to make peace with God or to appease him, is so to suffer the wrath of God as to satisfy God and to remove it. And truly how Christ should possibly escape the feeling of the wrath of God incensed against our sins, he standing as a surety for us with our sins laid upon him, and for them fully to satisfy the justice of God, is not Christianly or rationally imaginable.

And whereas some do object that Christ was always the beloved of his Father, and therefore could never be the object of God's wrath:

I answer, By distinguishing of the person of Christ, whom his Father always loved, and as sustaining our sins, and in our room standing to satisfy the justice of God; and as so the wrath of God fell upon him and he bore it, and so satisfied the justice of God, that we thereby are now delivered from wrath through him. So the apostle, Rom. v. 9, 'Much more, being justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath by him;' 1 Thes. i. 10, 'And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.'

It is a groundless conceit of some learned heads, who deny the cause of Christ's agony to be the drinking of that cup of wrath that was given to him by his Father, John xviii. 11, saying that the sight of it only, and of the peril he saw we were in, was the cause of his agony; for the cup was not only shewed unto him, and the great wrath due to our sins set before him, that he should see it and tremble at the apprehension of the danger we were in, but it was poured not only on him, but into him, that he for the sins of his redeemed ones should suffer it sensibly, and drink it, that the bitterness thereof might affect all the powers of his soul and body; for the Scripture does sufficiently testify that not only upon the sight and apprehension of this wrath and curse coming on him the holy human nature did holily abhor it, but also that he submitted to receive it upon the consideration of the divine decree and agreement made upon the price to be paid by him, and

that upon the feeling of this wrath, this agony in his soul, the bloody sweat of his body was brought on.¹

Quest. But how could the pourings forth of the Father's wrath upon his innocent and dear Son consist with his Fatherly love to him? &c.

Ans. Even as the innocency and holiness of Christ could well consist with his taking upon him the punishment of our sins; for even the wrath of a just man, inflicting capital punishment on a condemned person, put case it be his own child, can well consist with fatherly affection towards his child suffering punishment. Did you never see a father weep over such a son that he has corrected most severely? Did you never see a judge shed tears for those very persons that he has condemned? There is no doubt but wrath and love can well consist in God, in whom affections do not war one with another, nor fight with reason, as it often falls among men; for the affections ascribed unto God are effects rather of his holy will towards us, than properly called affections in him; and these effects of God's will about us do always tend to our happiness and blessedness at last, however they are diverse one from another in themselves.

[3.] Thirdly, That Jesus Christ did feel and suffer *the very torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner*. I readily grant that Jesus Christ did not locally descend into hell, to suffer there amongst the damned, neither did he suffer hellish darkness, nor the flames of hell, nor the worm that never dies, nor final despair, nor guilt of conscience, nor gnashing of teeth, nor impatient indignation, nor eternal separation from God. These things were absolutely inconsistent with the holiness, purity, and dignity of his person, and with the office of a mediator and redeemer. But yet I say that our Lord Jesus Christ did suffer in his soul for our sins such pain, horror, terror, agony, and consternation, as amounted unto *cruciatūs infernales*, and are in Scripture called 'The sorrows of hell.' 'The sorrows of hell did compass me about,' Ps. xviii. 5, or the cords of hell did compass me about, such as where-with they bind malefactors when they are led forth to execution. Now these sorrows, these cords of hell, were the things that extorted from him that passionate expostulation, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?' Mat. xxvii. 46. Christ's sufferings were unspeakable, and somewhat answerable to the pains of hell. Hence the Greek Litany, 'By thine unknown sufferings, good Lord deliver us,' *Δι' ἀγνώστων σου παθημάτων*. Funinus, an Italian martyr, being asked by one why he was so merry at his death, sith Christ himself was so sorrowful; 'Christ,' said he, 'sustained in his soul all the sorrows and conflicts with hell and death due to us;' by whose sufferings we are delivered from sorrow and the fear of them all.² It was a great saying of a very learned man, that setting iniquity and eternity of punishment aside, which Christ might not sustain, Christ did more vehemently and sharply feel the wrath of God than ever any man did or shall, no not any person reprobated and damned excepted; and certainly the reason annexed to prove this expression is very weighty, because all the wrath that was due for all the sins of the elect, all whose sins

¹ Heb. v. 7; Mat. xxvi. 38, 39, 42, 44; 1 Cor. vi. 20, and vii. 23.

² [Foxe] Acts and Mon., fol. 853.

were laid on Christ, Isa. liii. 6, was greater than the wrath which belonged to any one sinner, though damned for his personal sinning : and besides this, if you do seriously consider those sufferings of Christ in his agony in the garden, you may by them conjecture what hellish torments Christ did suffer for us. In that agony of his, he was afraid and amazed, and fell flat on the ground, Mat. xiv. 33, 34. He began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy ; and saith unto them, ' My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death,' Luke xxii. 44 ; and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground. He did sweat clotted blood to such abundance, that it streamed through his apparel, and did wet the ground ; which dreadful agony of Christ, how it could arise from any other cause than the sense of the wrath of God, parallel to that in hell, I know not.

Orthodox divines do generally take Christ's sufferings in his soul, and the detaining his body in the grave, put in as the close and last part of Christ's sufferings, as the true meaning of that expression, ' He descended into hell,' not only because these pains which Christ suffered both in body and soul were due to us in full measure, but also because that which Christ in point of torment and vexation suffered was in some respect of the same kind with the torment of the damned. For the clearing of this, consider, that in the punishment of the damned there are these three things : 1. The perverse disposition of the mind of the damned in their sufferings ; 2. The duration and perpetuity of their punishment ; and 3. The punishment itself, tormenting soul and body. Of these three, the first two could have no place in Christ : not the first, because he willingly offered himself a sacrifice for our sins, and upon agreement paid the ransom fully, Heb. ix. 14, and x. 5-8 ; not the second, because he could no longer be held under sorrows and sufferings than he had satisfied divine justice, and paid the price that he was to lay down, Acts ii. 24. And his infinite excellency and glory made his short sufferings to be of infinite worth, and equivalent to our everlasting sufferings, 1 Pet. ii. 24 ; 1 Cor. vi. 20. The third, then, only remaineth, which was the real and sensible torments of his soul and body, which he did really feel and experience when he was upon the cross. O sirs ! what need you question Christ's undergoing of hellish pains, when all the pains, torments, curse, and wrath which was due to the elect did fall on Christ, and lie on Christ till divine justice was fully satisfied. Though Christ did not suffer eternal death for sinners, yet he suffered that which was equivalent, and therefore the justice of God is by his death wholly appeased.

It is good seriously to ponder upon these scriptures : Ps. xviii. 51, ' The sorrows of hell did compass me about ; ' Ps. lxxxviii. 31, ' My soul is filled with evil, and my life draweth near to hell ; ' Ps. lxxxvi. 13, ' Thou hast delivered my soul from the nethermost hell.' In these places the prophet speaks in the person of Christ, and the Papists themselves do confess that the Hebrew word *sheol*, that is here used, is taken for hell properly, and not for the grave ; therefore these places do strongly conclude for the hellish sorrows or sufferings of Christ. So Acts ii. 27, ' Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell.' If Christ's soul be not left or forsaken in hell, yet it follows it was in hell ; not that Christ did feel the sorrows of hell after death, but that he did feel the

very sorrows of hell in his soul while he lived. Certainly the whole punishment of body and soul which was due unto us, Christ our Redeemer was in general to suffer and satisfy for in his own person ; but the torments and terrors of hell, and the vehement sense of God's wrath, are that punishment which did belong to the soul ; *ergo*, Christ did suffer the torments and terrors of hell. By the whole punishment you are to understand the whole kind or substance of the punishment, not all the circumstances, and the very same manner. The whole punishment then is the whole kind of punishment—that is, in body and soul—which Christ ought to have suffered, though not in the same manner and circumstance. 1. Neither for the place of hell locally ; nor 2. For the time eternally ; nor 3. For the manner sinfully. When we say Christ was to suffer our whole punishment, all such punishments as cannot be suffered without sin, as desperation [and] final reprobation, are manifestly excepted. Christ did bear all our punishment, though not as we should have borne it ; that is, 1. Sinfully ; 2. Eternally ; 3. Hellishly. But he did so bear all our punishment as to finish all upon the cross ; and in such sort as God's justice was satisfied, his person not disgraced, nor his holiness defiled, and yet man's salvation fully perfected, Col. ii. 14, 15 ; Heb. ix. 14, and x. 15. We constantly affirm that Christ did suffer the pains of hell in his soul, with these three restrictions:—1. That there be neither indignity offered to his royal person ; 2. Nor injury to his holy nature ; 3. Nor impossibility to his glorious work. All such pains of hell then as Christ might have suffered:—1. His person not dishonoured ; 2. His nature with sin not defiled ; 3. His work of our redemption not hindered, we do steadfastly believe were sustained by our blessed Saviour. Consider a few things.

First, Consider *the adjuncts of hell*, which are these four : 1. The place, which is infernal ; 2. The time, which is perpetual ; 3. The darkness, which is unspeakable ; 4. The ministers and tormentors—the spirits and devils, which are irreconcilable. Now these adjuncts of hell Christ is freed from. For the dignity of his person, it was not fit that the Son of God, the heir of heaven, should be shut up in hell, or that he should for ever be tormented, who is never from God's presence sequestered, or that the light of the world should be closed up in darkness, or that he who bindeth the evil spirits should be bound by them, &c.

Secondly, Consider *the effects, or rather the defects, of hell*, which are chiefly these two : First, The deprivation of all virtue, grace, holiness ; Secondly, The real possession of all vice, impiety, blasphemy, &c. Now the necessity of the work of Christ doth exempt him from these effects ; for if he had been either void of grace, or possessed with vice, he could not have been the Redeemer of poor lost souls ; for the want of virtue he could not have redeemed others ; for the presence of sin he should have been redeemed himself ; and from fretting indignation and fearful desperation, the piety and sanctity of his nature doth preserve him, who, being without sin, could neither by indignation displease his Father, nor by desperation destroy himself. So that, if you consider either the adjuncts of hell or the effects, then I say we do remove all them as far off from the holy soul of Christ as heaven is from hell, or the east from the west, or darkness from light, &c.

Thirdly, Consider the punishment itself. Now, concerning this, we say that our blessed Saviour, as in himself he bare all the sins of the elect: so he also suffered the whole punishment of body and soul in general that was due unto us, for the same which we should have endured if he had not satisfied for it; and so consequently we affirm that he felt the anguish of soul and horror of God's wrath, and so in soul entered into the torments of hell for us, sustained them and vanquished them. One speaking in honour of Christ's passion, saith, *Cum iram Dei sibi propositum videret*, When he saw the wrath of God set before him, presenting himself before God's tribunal loaden with the sins of the whole world, it was necessary for him to fear the deep bottomless pit of death.¹ Again saith the same author,² *Cum species Christo objecta est*, &c., Such an object being offered to Christ's view, as though God being set against him, he were appointed to destruction; he was with horror affrighted, which was able a hundred times to have swallowed up all mortal creatures, but he, by the wonderful power of his Spirit, escaped with victory. 'What dishonour was it to our Saviour Christ,' saith another,³ 'to suffer that which was necessary for our redemption,'—namely, that torment of hell which we had deserved, and which the justice of God required that he should endure for our redemption; or rather, what is more to the honour of Christ, than that he vouchsafed to descend into hell for us, and to abide that bitter pain which we had deserved to suffer eternally; and what may rather be called hell than the anguish of soul which he suffered, when, he being yet God, complained that he was forsaken of God? O sirs, this we need not fear to confess, that Christ, bearing our sins in himself upon the cross, did feel himself during that combat as rejected and forsaken of God and accursed for us, and the flames of his Father's wrath burning within him; so that to the honour of Christ's passion we confess that our blessed Redeemer refused no part of our punishment, but endured the very pains of hell, so far as they tended not neither to the derogation of his person, deprivation of his nature, destruction of his office, &c.

Here it may be queried whether the Lord Jesus Christ underwent the *idem*, the very self-same punishment that we should have undergone, or only the *tantundem*, that which did amount and was equivalent thereunto? To which I answer, that in different respects both may be affirmed. The punishment which Christ endured, if it be considered in its substance, kind, or nature, so it was the same with that the sinner himself should have undergone; but if it be considered with respect to certain circumstances, adjuncts, or accidents which attend that punishment, as inflicted upon the sinner, so it was but equivalent, and not the same. The punishment due to the sinner was death, the curse of the law, upon the breach of the first covenant. Now this Christ underwent, for 'he was made a curse for us,' Gal. iii. 13. The adjuncts attending this death were the eternity of it, desperation going along with it, &c. These Christ was freed from, the dignity of his person supplying the former, the sanctity of his person securing him against the latter; therefore in reference unto these, and to some

¹ Calvin, in Mat. xxvi. 39.

² Calvin, in Mat. xxvii. 46.

³ Fulke, in Act. ii. sec. 11. [Fulke or Fulcius or Fulcones.—G.]

other things already mentioned, it was but the *tantundem*, not the *idem*; but suppose there had been nothing of sameness, nothing beyond equivalency in what Christ suffered, yet that was enough, for it was not required that Christ should suffer every kind of curse which is the effect of sin, but in the general accursed death. Look, as in his fulfilling of the law for us, it was not necessary that he should perform every holy duty that the law requireth; for he could not perform that obedience which magistrates or married persons are bound to do—it is enough that there was a fulfilling of it in the general for us: so here it was not necessary that Jesus Christ should undergo in every respect the same punishment which the offender himself was liable unto; but if he shall undergo so much as may satisfy the law's threatenings, and vindicate the lawgiver in his truth, justice, and righteous government, that was enough. Now that was unquestionably done by Christ.

Object. 1. But some may object and say, How could Christ suffer the pains of the second death without disunion of the Godhead from the manhood? For the Godhead could not die. Or what interest had Christ's Godhead in his human sufferings, to make them both so short and so precious and satisfactory to divine justice for the sins of so many sinners, especially when we consider that God cannot suffer?

Ans. 1. I answer, It followeth not that because Christ is united into one person with God, that therefore he did not suffer the pains of hell; for by the same reason he should not have suffered in his body, for the union of his person could have preserved him from sufferings in the one as well as in the other, and neither God, angels, nor men compelled him to undertake this difficult and bloody work, but his own free and unspeakable love to mankind, as himself declares, John x. 17, 'Therefore my Father loves me, because I lay down my life;' ver. 18, 'No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself.' If Christ had been constrained to suffer, then both men and angels might fear and tremble; but as one [Bernard] saith well, *Voluntas sponte morientis placuit Deo*, The willingness of him that died pleased God, who offered himself to be the Redeemer of fallen man, Isa. liii. 12; Ps. xl. 7, 8; Heb. x. 9, 10.

Ans. 2. But secondly, I answer from 1 John iii. 16, 'Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us.' The person dying was God, else his person could have done us no good. The person suffering must be God as well as man, but the Godhead suffered not. As if you shoot off a cannon in the bright air, the air suffers, but the light of it suffers not. Actions and passions belong to persons. Nothing less than that person who is God-man could bear the brunt of the day, satisfy divine justice, pacify divine wrath, bring in an everlasting righteousness, and make us happy for ever. But,

Ans. 3. Thirdly, I answer thus, Albeit the passion of the human nature could not so far reach the Godhead of Christ, that it should in a physical sense suffer, which, indeed, is impossible, yet these sufferings did so affect the person, that it may truly be said that God suffered, and by his blood bought his people to himself; for albeit the proper and formal subject of physical sufferings be only the human

nature, yet the principal subject of sufferings, both in a physical and moral sense, is Christ's person, God and man, from the dignity whereof the worth and excellency of all sorts of sufferings, the merit and the satisfactory sufficiency of the price did flow, Acts xx. 28; 1 Pet. i. 18-20; 1 Cor. vi. 20, and vii. 23.

O sirs! you must seriously consider, that though Christ as God in his Godhead could not suffer in a physical sense, yet in a moral sense he might suffer and did suffer. For he being 'in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men; and being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross,' Phil. ii. 6-8. Oh, who can sum up the contradictions, the railings, the revilings, the contempts, the despisings and calumnies that Christ met with from sinners, yea, from the worst of sinners!

Object. 2. But how could so low a debasing of the Son of man, or of the human nature assumed by Christ, consist with the majesty of the person of the Son of God?

Ans. We must distinguish those things in Christ, which are proper to either of the two natures, from those things which are ascribed to his person in respect of either of the natures or both the natures; for infirmity, physical suffering, or mortality are proper to the human nature. The glory of power, and grace, and mercy, and super-excellent majesty, and such like, are proper to the Deity; but the sufferings of the human nature are so far from diminishing the glory of the divine nature, that they do manifest the same, and make it appear more clearly and gloriously; for by how much the human nature was weakened, depressed, and despised for our sins, for our sakes, by so much the more the love of Christ, God and man in one person toward man, and his mercy, and power, and grace to man, do shine in the eyes of all that judiciously do look upon him.

Object. 3. How could Christ endure hell fire without grievous sins, as blasphemy and despair, &c.?

Ans. 1. I answer, That we may walk safely and without offence, these things must be premised: First, That the sorrows and sufferings of hell be no otherwise attributed to Christ, than as they may stand with the dignity and worthiness of his person, the holiness of his nature, and the performance of the office and work of our redemption.

[1.] First, then, For the soul of Christ to suffer in the local place of hell, to remain in the darkness thereof, and to be tormented with the material flames there, and eternally to be damned, was not for the dignity of his person, to whom for his excellency and worthiness both the place, manner, and time of those torments were dispensed with.

[2.] Secondly, Final rejection and desperation, blasphemy, and the worm of conscience, agreeth not with the holiness of his nature, 'Who was a lamb without a spot,' Heb. ix. 14; 1 Pet. i. 19, and therefore we do not, we dare not ascribe them to him. But,

[3.] Thirdly, Destruction of body and soul, which is the second death, could not fall upon Christ; for this were to have destroyed the work of our redemption, if he had been subject to destruction. But,

[4.] Fourthly and lastly, Blasphemy and despair are no parts of the

pains of the damned, but the consequents, and follow the sense of God's wrath in a sinful creature that is overcome by it. But Christ had no sin of his own, neither was he overcome of wrath, and therefore he always held fast his integrity and innocency, Rev. xvi. 9, 11. Despair is an unavoidable companion, attending the pains of the second death, as all reprobates do experience. Desperation is an utter hopelessness of any good, and a certain expectation and waiting on the worst that can befall; and this is the lot and portion of the damned in hell. The wretched sinner in hell, seeing the sentence passed against him, God's purpose fulfilled, never to be reversed, the gates of hell made fast upon him, and a great gulf fixed betwixt hell and heaven, which renders his escape impossible; he now gives up all, and reckons on nothing but uttermost misery, Luke xvi. 26. Now mark, this despair is not an essential part of the second death, but only a consequent, or, at the most, an effect occasioned by the sinner's view of his irremediless, woeful condition. But this neither did nor could possibly befall the Lord Jesus. He was able, by the power of his Godhead, both to suffer and to satisfy and to overcome; therefore he expected a good issue, and knew that the end should be happy, and that he should not be ashamed, Isa. l. 6, 7, &c.; Ps. xvi. 9, 10; Acts ii. 26, 28, 31. Though a very shallow stream would easily drown a little child, there being no hope of escape for it unless one or another should step in seasonably to prevent it, yet a man that is grown up may groundedly hope to escape out of a far more deep and dangerous place, because by reason of his stature, strength, and skill he could wade or swim out. Surely the wrath of the Almighty, manifested in hell, is like the vast ocean, or some broad, deep river; and therefore when the sinful sons and daughters of Adam, which are without strength, Rom. v. 6, are hurled into the midst of it, they must needs lie down in their confusion, as altogether hopeless of deliverance or escaping. But this despair could not seize upon Jesus Christ, because, although his Father took him and cast him into the sea of his wrath, so that all the billows of it went over him, Isa. lxiii. 1-3, *seq.*, yet being the mighty God, with whom nothing is impossible, he was very able to pass through that sea of wrath and sorrow, which would have drowned all the world, and come safe to shore.

Object. 4. But when did Christ suffer hellish torments? They are inflicted after death, not usually before it; but Christ's soul went straight after death into paradise. How else could he say to the penitent thief, 'This day shalt thou be with me in paradise'? Now, to this objection I shall give these following answers:

Ans. 1. First, *That Christ's soul, after his passion upon the cross, did not really and locally descend into the place of the damned, may be thus made evident:*

[1.] First, All the evangelists, and so Luke among the rest, intending to make an exact narrative of the life and death of Christ, hath set down at large his passion, death, burial, resurrection, and ascension; and besides, they make rehearsal of very small circumstances; therefore we may safely conclude, that they would never have omitted Christ's local descent into the place of the damned, if there had been any such thing. Besides, the great end why they penned this history

was, that we might believe that 'Jesus Christ is the Son of God; and that thus believing we might have life everlasting,' John xx. 31. Now there could not have been a greater matter for the confirmation of our faith than this, that Jesus, the son of Mary, who went down to the place of the damned, returned thence to live in all happiness and blessedness for ever. But,

[2.] Secondly, If Christ did go into the place of the damned, then he went either in soul, or in body, or in his Godhead. Not in his Godhead, for that could not descend, because it is everywhere, and his body was in the grave; and as for his soul, it went not to hell, but immediately after his death it went to paradise—that is, the third heaven, a place of joy and happiness: 'This day shalt thou be with me in paradise,' Luke xxiii. 43; which words of Christ must be understood of his manhood or soul, and not of his Godhead; for they are an answer to a demand, and therefore unto it they must be suitable. The thief makes his request, 'Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom,' ver. 42; to which Christ answers, 'Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.' 'I shall,' saith Christ, 'this day enter into paradise, and there shalt thou be with me.' Now, there is no entrance but in regard of his soul or manhood, for the Godhead, which is at all times in all places, cannot be properly said to enter into a place, Ps. cxxxix. 7, 13; Jer. xxiii. 23, 24. But,

[3.] Thirdly, When Christ saith, 'To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise,' he doth intimate, as some observe, a resemblance which is between the first and second Adam. The first Adam quickly sinned against God, and was as quickly cast out of paradise by God. Christ, the second Adam, having made a perfect and complete satisfaction to the justice of God, and the law of God, for man's sin, must immediately enter into paradise, Heb. ix. 26, 28, and x. 14. Now to say that Christ, in soul, descended locally into hell, is to abolish this analogy between the first and second Adam. But,

Ans. 2. Secondly, It is not impossible that the pains of the second death should be suffered in this life. Time and place are but circumstances. The main substance of the second death is the bearing of God's fierce wrath and indignation. Divine favour shining upon a man in hell, would turn hell into a heaven. All sober, seeing, serious Christians will grant, that the true, though not the full joys of heaven may be felt and experienced in this life: 1 Pet. i. 8, 'Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory,' or glorious; either because this their rejoicing was a taste of their future glory, or because it made them glorious in the eyes of men. The original word, *δεδοξαμένῳ*, is glorified already; a piece of God's kingdom and heaven's happiness aforehand. Ah, how many precious saints, both living and dying, have cried out, Oh the joy! the joy! the inexpressible joy that I find in my soul! Eph. ii. 6, 'He hath made us sit together in heavenly places, in Christ Jesus.' What is this else, but even while we live, by faith to possess the very joys of heaven on this side heaven! Now look, as the true joys of heaven may be felt on this side heaven, so the true, though not the full pains of hell, may be felt on this side

hell ; and doubtless Cain, Judas, Julian, Spira, and others have found it so. That father hit the mark, who said, *Judicis in mente tua sedes; ibi Deus adest, accusator conscientia, tortor timor*, 'The judge's tribunal-seat is in thy soul, God sitteth there as judge, thy conscience is the accuser, and fear is the tormentor.'¹ Now if there be in the soul a judge, an accuser, and a tormentor, then certainly there is a true taste of the torments of hell on this side hell.

Ans. 3. Thirdly, *The place hell is no part of the payment.* The laying down of the price makes the satisfaction. This is all that is spoken and threatened to Adam, 'Thou shalt die the death,' Gen. ii. 17; and this may be suffered here. The wicked go to hell as their prison, because they can never pay their debts, otherwise the debt may as well be paid in the market as the jail.² Now Christ did discharge all his people's debts in the days of his flesh, when he offered up strong cries and tears, Heb. v. 7, and not after death. Look, as a king entering into prison to loose the prisoners' chains, and to pay their debts, is said to have been in prison ; so our Lord Jesus Christ, by his soul's sufferings, which is the hell he entered into, hath released us of our pains and chains, and paid our debts, and in this sense he may be said to have entered into hell, though he never actually entered into the local place of the damned, which is properly called hell ; for in that place there is neither virtue nor goodness, holiness nor happiness, and therefore the holiness of Christ's person would never suffer him to descend into such a place. In the local place of heaven and hell, it is not possible for any neither to be at once, nor yet at sundry times successively, for there is no passing from heaven to hell, or from hell to heaven, Luke xvi. 26. The place of suffering is but a circumstance in the business. Hell, the place of the damned, is no part of the debt, therefore neither is suffering there locally any part of the payment of it, no more than a prison is any part of an earthly debt, or of the payment of it. The surety may satisfy the creditor in the place appointed for payment, or in the open court, which being done, the debtor and surety both are acquitted, that they need not go to prison. If either of them go to prison, it is because they do not or cannot pay the debt ; for all that justice requires is to satisfy the debt, to the which the prison is merely extrinsecal. Even so the justice of God cannot be satisfied for the transgression of the law, but by the death of the sinner ; but it doth not require that this should be done in the place of the damned. The wicked go to prison because they do not, they cannot, make satisfaction ; otherwise Christ, having fully discharged the debt, needed not go to prison.

Object. 5. But the pains and torments that are due to man's sins are to be everlasting, and how then can Christ's short sufferings countervail them ?

Ans. 1. That Christ's sufferings in his soul and body were equivalent to it ; although, to speak properly, eternity is not of the essence

¹ Augustine in Ps. lvii.

² Peter saith, the devils are cast down to hell, and kept in chains of darkness. 2 Pet. ii. 4. And Paul calls the devil the prince that ruleth in the air, Eph. ii. 2. The air then is the devil's hell. Well, then, seeing this air is the devil's present hell, we may safely conclude that hell may be in this present world ; and therefore it is neither impossible nor improbable that the cross was Christ's hell.

of death, which is the reward of sin and threatened by God; but it is accidental, because man thus dying is never able to satisfy God, therefore, seeing he cannot pay the last farthing, he is for ever kept in prison, Mat. xviii. 28, 35. Look, as eternal death hath in it eternity and despair necessarily in all those that so die, so Christ could not suffer, but what was wanting in duration was supplied—1. By the immensity of his sorrows conflicting with the sense of God's wrath, because of our sins imputed to him, so that he suffered more grief than if the sorrows of all men were put together. Christ's hell-sorrows on the cross were meritorious and fully satisfactory for our everlasting punishment, and therefore in greatness were to exceed all other men's sorrows, as being answerable to God's justice. 2. By the dignity and worth of him that did suffer. Therefore the Scripture calls it the blood of God. The damned must bear the wrath of God to all eternity, because they can never satisfy the justice of God for sin. Therefore they must lie by it world without end. But Christ hath made an infinite satisfaction in a finite time, by undergoing that fierce battle with the wrath of God, and getting the victory in a few hours, which is equivalent to the creatures bearing it and grappling with it everlastingly. This length or shortness of durance is but a circumstance, not of any necessary consideration in this case. Suppose a man indebted £100, and likely to lie in prison till he shall pay it, yet utterly unable, if another man comes and lays down the money on two hours' warning, is not this as well or better done? that which may be done to as good or better purpose in a short time, what need is there to draw it out at length? The justice of the law did not require that either the sinner or his surety should suffer the eternity of hell's torments, but only their extremity. It doth abundantly counterpoise the eternity of the punishment, that the person which suffered was the eternal God. Besides, it was impossible that he should be detained under the sorrows of death, Acts ii. 24. And if he had been so detained, then he had not 'spoiled principalities and powers, nor triumphed over them,' Col. ii. 15, but had been overcome, and so had not attained his end. But,

Ans. 2. Secondly, The pains of hell which Christ suffered, though they were not infinite in time, yet were they of an infinite price and value for the dignity of the person that suffered them. Christ's temporal enduring of hellish sorrows was as effectual and meritorious as if they had been perpetual. The dignity of Christ's person did bear him out in that which was not meet for him to suffer, nor fit in respect of our redemption; for if he should have suffered eternally, our redemption could never have been accomplished. But for him to suffer in soul as he did in body, was neither derogatory to his person nor prejudicial to his work. Infinitely in time Christ was not to suffer. As one well observes,¹ Christ died *secundum tempus*, in time, or according to time. *Tempora in mundo sunt*, &c., Times are in the world where the sun riseth and setteth. Unto this time he died. But where there is no time, there he was found, not only living, but conquering. Christ, God-man, suffered punishment in measure infinite, and therefore there is no ground why he should endure it

¹ Ambrose in 5 ad Rom. vi.

eternally; and indeed it was impossible that Christ should be holden of death, Acts ii. 24, because he was both the Lord of life and the Lord's Holy One, 1 Cor. ii. 8; Acts ii. 27. But,

Ans. 3. Thirdly, If the measure of a man's punishment were infinite, the duration needs not be infinite. Sinful man's measure of punishment is finite, and therefore the duration of his punishment must be infinite, because the punishment must be answerable to the infinite evil of sin committed against an infinite God. O sirs, continual imprisonment in hell arises from man's not being able to pay the price; for could he pay the debt in one year, he needs not lie two years in prison. Now the debt is the first and second death; and because sinful man cannot pay it in any time, he must endure it eternally. But now Christ has laid down ready pay upon the nail to the full for all his chosen ones, and therefore it is not required of him that he should suffer for ever, neither can it stand with the holiness or justice of God to hold him under the second death, he having paid the debt to the utmost farthing. Now that he hath fully paid the debt himself, witnesseth John, chap. xix. 30, saying 'when he had received the vinegar, It is finished;' so ver. 28, 'After this, Jesus knowing that all things were accomplished.' Though there are many interpretations given of this place by Augustine, Chrysostom, Jansenius, and others, yet doubtless this alone will hold water—viz., that the heavy wrath of the Lord which did pursue Christ, and the second death which filled him with grievous terrors, is now over and past, and man's redemption finished. He speaketh here of that which presently should be, and in the yielding up his ghost was accomplished.

And thus you see that Jesus Christ did feel and suffer the very torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner; and you see also that Christ did not locally descend into hell. Shall we make a few inferences from hence:

1. First, then, Oh, how should these sad sufferings of Christ for us endear Christ to us! Oh, what precious thoughts should we have of him! Ps. cxxxvi. 17, 18. Oh, how should we prize him! how should we honour him! how should we love him! and how should we be swallowed up in the admiration of him! As his love to us has been matchless, so his sufferings for us has been matchless. I have read of Nero, that he had a shirt made of a salamander's skin, so that if he did walk through the fire in it, it would keep him from burning. So Christ is the true salamander's skin that will keep the soul from everlasting burnings, Isa. xxxiii. 14; and therefore well may Christians cry out with that martyr, [Lambert], 'None but Christ, none but Christ.' Tigranes, in Xenophon, coming to redeem his father and friends, with his wife, that were taken prisoners by Cyrus, was asked among other things, what ransom he would give for his wife. He answered, 'He would redeem her liberty with his own life;' but having prevailed, as they returned together, every one commended Cyrus for a goodly man; and Tigranes would needs know of his wife, 'What she thought of him.' 'Truly,' said she, 'I cannot tell, for I did not so much as look on him, or see him.' 'Whom then,' said he, wondering, 'did you look upon?' 'Whom should I look upon,' replied she, 'but him that would have redeemed my liberty

with his own life?' So every believer should esteem nothing worth a looking on, but that Jesus who hath redeemed him with his own blood, 1 Cor. vi. 20; Acts xx. 28; 1 Pet. i. 18, 19. Plutarch tells us,¹ 'That when Titus Flaminius had freed the poor Grecians from the bondage with which they had been long ground by their oppressions, and the herald was to proclaim in their audience the articles of peace he had concluded for them, they so pressed upon him, not being half of them able to hear, that he was in great danger to have lost his life in the press; at last, reading them a second time, when they came to understand distinctly how that their case stood, they so shouted for joy, crying *σώτηρ, σώτηρ*, a saviour, a saviour, that they made the very heavens ring again with their acclamations, and the very birds fall down astonished.' And all that night the poor Grecians, with instruments of music, and songs of praise, danced and sang about his tent, extolling him as a god that had delivered them. But oh, then, what infinite cause have we to exalt and cry up our dear Lord Jesus, who by the hellish sorrows that he suffered for us, hath freed us from that more dreadful bondage of sin, Satan, and wrath that we lay under! Oh, prize that Jesus! Oh, exalt that Christ! Oh, extol that Saviour, who has saved you from that eternal wrath that all the angels in heaven, and all the men on earth could never have saved you from! The name of Jesus, saith one, [Chrysostom,] hath a thousand treasures of joy and comfort in it, and is therefore used by Paul five hundred times, as some have observed. The name of a Saviour, saith another, [Bernard,] 'is honey in the mouth, and music in the ears, and a jubilee in the heart,' *Dulce nomen Christi*. Were Christ in your bosom as a flower of delight, for he is a whole paradise of delight, saith one, [Justin Martyr.] 'I had rather,' saith another, [Luther,] 'be in hell with Christ, than in heaven without him, for Christ is the crown of crowns, the glory of glories, and the heaven of heaven.' One saith, [Austin,] 'that he would willingly go through hell to Christ.' Another saith, [Bernard,] 'he had rather be in his chimney-corner with Christ, than in heaven without him.' One cried out, 'I had rather have one Christ than a thousand worlds.' Jesus, in the China tongue, signifies the rising sun, and such a rising sun was he to Julius Palmer, that when all concluded that he was dead, being turned as black as a coal in the fire, at last he moved his scorched lips, and was heard to say, 'Sweet Jesus,' Mal. iv. 2. It was an excellent answer of one of the martyrs, when he was offered riches and honours if he would recant: 'Do but,' said he, 'offer me somewhat that is better than my Lord Jesus Christ, and you shall see what I will say to you.' Now, oh that the hellish sorrows and sufferings of Christ for us, might raise in all our hearts such a high estimation, and such a deep admiration, as hath been raised in those worthies last mentioned! It was a sweet prayer of him who thus prayed, 'Lord, make thy Son dear, very dear, exceeding dear, and only dear and precious to me.' Whenever we seriously think of the great and sore sufferings of Christ, it will be good to pray as he prayed. But,

2. Secondly, If Jesus Christ did feel and suffer the very torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner, then let me infer that certainly

¹ Plutarch in vita Tit. Flam.

there is a hell, a place of torment provided and prepared for all wicked and ungodly persons.¹ Danaeus reckons up no less than nineteen several sorts of heretics that denied it; and are there not many erroneous and deluded persons that stoutly and daily assert that there is no hell but what men feel in their own consciences? Ah, how many are there that rejoice to do evil, and delight in their abominations, and take pleasure in unrighteousness!² But could men do thus, durst men do thus, did they really believe that hell was prepared and fitted for them, and that the fiery lake was but a little before them? Heaven is a place where all is joyful, and hell is a place where all is doleful. In heaven there is nothing but happiness, and in hell there is nothing but heaviness, nothing but endless, easeless, and remediless torments. Did men believe this, how could they go so merrily on in the way to hell? Cato once said to Cæsar, *Credo quæ de inferis dicuntur falsa esse existimas*, I believe that thou thinkest all that is said of hell to be false and fabulous. So I may say to many in this day, Surely you think that all that is spoken and written of hell is but a story. Don't you look upon the people of God to be of all men the most miserable, and yourselves of all men the most happy? Yes! Oh, but how can this be, did you really believe that there was a heaven for the righteous and a hell for the wicked? It is an Italian proverb, *Qui Venetius non vidit, non credit*, &c., He who hath not seen Venice will not believe; and he who hath not lived some time there doth not understand what a city it is. This in a sense is true of hell. But now for the *Quod sit*, that there is a hell, that there is such a place of misery prepared and appointed for the wicked, I shall briefly demonstrate against the high atheists and Socinians of this day, and therefore thus,

[1.] First, *God created angels and men after his own image*. Man must be so much honoured as to be made like God; and no creature must be so much honoured as to be made like man. The pattern after which man was made is sometimes called image alone. So 'God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him,' Gen. i. 27. Sometimes likeness alone: Gen. v. 1, 'In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him.' Sometimes both: Gen. i. 26, 'Let us make man in our image, after our likeness;' which makes a prudent interpreter think that when they are joined it is by hendiadys, and that the Holy Ghost meaneth an image most like his own.³ It is exceeding much for man's honour that he is an epitome of the world, an abridgment of other creatures, partaking with the stones in being, with the stars in motion, with the plants in growing, with the beasts in sense, and with angels in science. But his being made after God's image is far more. You know, when great men erect a stately building, they cause their own picture to be hung upon it, that spectators may know who was the chief founder of it. So when God had created the fabric of this world, the last thing

¹ All the hell Socinians grant is annihilation, by reason it is said, they shall be destroyed, *vide* Socinus, Racov[ian] Cat[echism], Crellius, Biddle, Richardson, &c.

² Jer. xi. 15; Prov. ii. 14; Isa. lxx. 3; 2 Thes. ii. 11; Mat. xxv. 41; Isa. xxx. 33.

³ Andr. Rivet, in Gen. Exercit. 4. *Nihil est in macrocosmo magnum præter microcosmum*, There is nothing in the vast world of creatures truly great, except the little world of man.—*Favorinus*. [It takes another form—There is nothing great on earth but man, and there is nothing great in man but mind.—G.]

he did was the setting up his own picture in it, creating man after his own image. When the great Creator went about that noble work, that prime piece of making of man, he doth, as it were, call a solemn council of the sacred persons in the Trinity: 'And God said, Let us make man in our image,' &c., Gen. i. 26. Man before his fall was the best of creatures, but since his fall he is become the worst of creatures.¹ He that was once the image of God, the glory of Paradise, the world's lord, and the Lord's darling, is now become an abomination to God, a burden to heaven, a plague to the world, and a slave to Satan. When man first came out of God's mint he did shine most gloriously, as being bespangled with holiness and clad with the royal robe of righteousness; his understanding was filled with knowledge; his will with uprightness; his affections with holiness, &c. But yet, being a mutable creature, and subject to temptations, Satan quickly stripped him of his happiness, and cheated and cozened him of his imperial crown—as we use to do children—with an apple. If God had created angels and men immutable, he had created them gods and not creatures; but being made mutable we know they did fall from their primitive purity and glory; and we know that out of the whole host of angels he kept some from falling; and when all mankind was fallen he redeemed some by his Son. Now mark, as he shews mercy upon some in their salvation, so it is meet that he should glorify his justice upon others in their condemnation, Rom. vii. 21–23. And because there must be distinct places for the exercise of the one and for the execution of the other, which are in God equally infinite by an irrecoverable² decree from the foundation of the world, a glorious habitation was prepared for the one, and a most hideous dungeon for the other. 'These shall go into everlasting punishment, and the righteous into life eternal,' Mat. xxv. 46; yea, so certain are both these places that they were of old prepared for that very purpose. 'Inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world;' and so, 'Depart, ye cursed, into everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels,' ver. 41. Look, as God foresaw the different estates and conditions of men and angels, so he provided for them distinct and different places. Doubtless, hell was constituted before angels or men fell. Hell was framed before sin was hatched, as heaven was formed and fitted before any of the inhabitants were produced. But,

[2.] Secondly, That there is a hell, *both the Old and New Testament doth clearly and fully testify*. Take some instances: Ps. ix. 17, 'The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.' In the Hebrew there are two 'intos,' 'into, into' hell; that is, 'The wicked shall certainly be turned into the nethermost hell;' yea, they shall forcibly be turned into the lowest and darkest place in hell.³ God will, as it were, with both hands thrust him into hell. If Sheol here signify the grave only, what punishment is here threatened to the wicked, which the righteous is not equally liable to? Doubtless, Sheol here is to be taken for that prison or place of torment where

¹ Man, saith one, in his creation is angelic; in his corruption diabolical; in his renovation theological; in his translation majestic; an angel in Eden, a devil in the world, a saint in the church, a king in heaven.

² = irreversible.—G.

³ Sheol is often put for the grave, Ps. xvi. 10, but not always.

divine justice detains all those in hold that have all their days rebelled against him; scorned his Son, despised the means of grace, and died in open rebellion against him.¹ The psalmist, saith my author, [Mollerus,] declares the miserable condition of all those who live and die in their sins: '*Æternis punientur pœnis,*' They shall be everlastingly punished. And Musculus reads the place thus: '*Animi impiorum cruciatibus debitis apud inferos punientur,*' The souls of the ungodly shall be punished in hell with deserved torments. Certainly, the very place in which the wicked shall lodge and be tormented to all eternity—viz., hell, the bottomless pit, a dungeon of darkness, a lake of fire and brimstone, a fiery furnace,—will extremely aggravate the dolefulness of their condition.² O sirs, were all the water in the sea ink, and every pile of grass a pen, and every hair on all the men's heads in the world the hand of a ready writer, all would be too short graphically to delineate the nature of this dungeon, where all lost souls must lodge for ever. Where is the man who, to gain a world, would lodge one night in a room that is haunted with devils; and is it nothing to dwell in hell with them for ever? So Solomon, Prov. v. 5, saith of the harlot, 'that her feet go down to death, her steps take hold on hell.' Here Sheol is translated hell, and in the judgment of Lavater is well translated too: '*Foveam vel infernum passus ejus tenebunt;*' which, saith he, is spoken not so much of natural death as of spiritual, and that eternal destruction which followeth thereupon; and he gives this for a reason why we should understand the place so, because whoredom being an abominable sin, defiling the members of the body of Christ, dissolving and making void the covenant between God and man, must needs be accompanied with an equivalent judgment, even excluding those that are guilty thereof, without repentance, the kingdom of heaven, into which pure and undefiled place no unclean thing can enter.³ And mark those words of the apostle, 'Whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.' If men will not judge them, God himself will, and give them a portion of misery answerable to their transgression.⁴ Though the magistrate be negligent in punishing them, yet God will judge them. Sometimes he judges them in this life, by pouring forth of his wrath upon their bodies, souls, consciences, names, and estates; but if he do not thus judge them in this life, yet he will be sure to judge them in the life to come; which Bishop Latimer well understood when he presented to Henry the Eighth, for a New-year's gift, a New Testament, with a napkin, having this posie about it, 'Whoremongers and adulterers God will judge;'⁵ yea, he has already adjudged them 'to the lake that burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death,' Rev. xxi. 8. 'Nothing,' saith one, 'hath so much enriched hell as beautiful faces.' The Germans have a proverb that 'the pavement of hell is made of the skulls of shaved priests and the glorious crests of gallants.'

¹ In tenebras ex tenebris; infelicitur exclusi, infelicius excludendi.—Augustine.

² Vide Bellarmine de Eter. Fælic.

³ By death and hell is in this place meant not only temporal death and the visible grave, but also eternal death and hell itself, even the place of the damned.—*The Dutch Annotations.*

⁴ 1 Cor. vi. 9, 10; Gal. v. 19–21; Rev. xxi. 27; Heb. xiii. 4.

⁵ [Foxe] Act. and Mon., 1594.

Their meaning is, that these sorts of persons being most given up to fleshly lusts and pleasures, they shall be sure to have the lowest place in hell. The harlot's feet go down to death, and her steps take hold on hell.¹ Wantonness brings men to hell. 'Whoremongers shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone,' Rev. xxi. 8. 'For fornication and uncleanness the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience,' Col. iii. 5, 6. The adulterer herself goes thither; and is it not fit that her companions in sin should be her companions in misery? 'I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation,' Rev. ii. 22. She hastens with sails and oars to hell, and draws her lovers with her. All her courses tend towards hell. Strumpets are the foundations and upholders of hell; they are the devil's best customers. Oh, the thousands of men and women that are sent to hell for wantonness! Hell would be very thin and empty were it not for these. Other sins are toilsome and troublesome, but wantonness is pleasant, and sends men and women merrily to hell. I have read a story, that one asking the devil which were the greatest sins? he answered, 'Covetousness and lust.' The other asking again, whether perjury and blasphemy were not greater sins? the devil replied, that in the schools of divinity they were the greater sins, but for the increase of his revenues the other were the greater. Bede,² therefore, styleth lust, *Filiam diaboli*, 'the daughter of the devil, which bringeth forth many children to him.' Oh that all wantons would take that counsel of Bernard,³ '*Ardor gehennæ extinguat in te ardorem luxurie, major ardor minorem superet*;' let the fire of hell extinguish the fire of lust in thee; let the greater burning overcome the lesser, 1 Tim. v. 6. Ponder upon that Prov. ix. 18, 'But he knoweth not that the dead are there, and that her guests are in the depths of hell.' To wit, those that are spiritually dead, and that are in the high way to be cut off, either by filthy diseases, or by the rage of the jealous husband, or by the sword of the magistrate, or by some quarrels arising amongst those that are rivals in the harlot's love, and are as sure to be damned as if they were in hell already. A metaphor from a dungeon. He knoweth not that the dead are there, and that her guests are in the depths of hell. Aben Ezra will have the original word **שם** *ibi*, 'there,' to be referred to hell;⁴ and the meaning of the whole verse to be more plainly thus, He knoweth not that her guests being dead are in the depth of hell. But the Hebrew word here used and translated dead, is *Rephaim*, which word, *Rephaim*, properly signifies giants, and to that sense is always rendered by the seventy *γίγαντες*. The meaning of this place seems to be no other, but that the strange woman will bring them who are her guests to hell, to keep the apostate giants company,—those mighty men of renown of the old world, whose wickedness was so great in the earth, that it repented and grieved God that he had made man, Gen. vi. 4, 5; and to take vengeance on whom he brought the general deluge upon the earth, and destroyed both man

¹ This is a *catachrestical* metaphor: they are sure to bring her thither, as a man hath that in possession on which with much delight he takes fast hold.

² Bede, in Prov. xxx.

³ Bern. Sermon. 23, ad soror.

⁴ Aben Ezra, in hunc vers.

and beast from the face thereof. These giants are called in Hebrew *Nephilim*, such as, being fallen from God, fell upon men, and by force and violence made others fall before them, even as the beasts of the field do fall before the roaring lions. These great oppressors were first drowned, and then damned, and sent to that accursed place which was appointed for them. Now to that place and condition, in which they are, the harlot will bring all her wanton lovers. Take one scripture more: Prov. xv. 11, 'Hell and destruction are before the Lord; how much more then the hearts of the children of men.'¹ Some think the latter is exegetical of the former; some by *Sheol* understand the grave, and by *Abaddon* hell. There is nothing so deep, or secret, that can be hid from the eyes of God. He knows the souls in hell, and the bodies in the grave, and much more men's thoughts here in this place, Prov. xv. 11. The Jews take the word *Abaddon*, which we render destruction, for *Gehenna*, that is, elliptically for *Beth-Abaddon*, the house of destruction. Though we know not where hell is, nor what is done there—though we know not what is become of those that are destroyed, nor what they suffer, yet God doth; and if the secrets of hell and devils are known to him, then much more the secrets of the hearts of the children of men. The devil, who is the great executioner of the wrath of God, is expressed by this word; as hell is called destruction in the abstract, so the devil is called a destroyer in the concrete. 'And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, or hell, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon,' Rev. ix. 11. Both the one and the other, the Hebrew and the Greek, signify the same thing—a destroyer. The devil, who is the jailer of hell, is called a destroyer, as hell itself is called destruction. Oh, sirs! hell is destruction; they that are once there are lost, yea, lost for ever, Rev. xiv. 11. The reason why hell is called destruction, is because they that are cast to hell are undone to all eternity. 'If hell,' said one, 'were to be endured a thousand years, methinks I could bear it, but for ever, that amazeth me.' Bellarmine, out of Barocius,² tells us of a learned man, who after his death appeared to his friend, complaining that he was adjudged to hell-torments, which, saith he, were they to last but a thousand thousand years, I should think it tolerable, but alas! they are eternal. The fire in hell is like that stone in Arcadia I have read of, which being once kindled, could not be quenched.³ There is no estate on earth so miserable, but a man may be delivered out of it; but out of hell there is no deliverance. It is not the prayer, no, not of a Gregory, though never so great, whatever they fable, that can rescue any that is once become hell's prisoner. I might add other scriptures out of the Old Testament, but let these suffice.

That there is such a place as hell is, prepared for the torment of the bodies and souls of wicked and impenitent sinners, is most clear and evident in the New Testament as well as in the Old. Amongst the many that might be produced, take these for a taste: Mat. v. 22, 'But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause'—rashly, vainly, and unreasonably—'shall be in danger of the

¹ Destruction is put as an adjunct or epithet of hell.

² De arte bene moriendi. [Qu., 'Baronius'!—G.]

³ As before, 'asbestos.'—G.

judgment; and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council; but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire;—*Gr.*, to, or in the Gehenna of fire.

In this scripture our Lord Jesus doth allude to the custom of punishing offenders used among the Jews. Now there were three degrees of punishments that were used among the Jews.

First, In every town where there were a hundred and twenty inhabitants, there was a little council of three, which judged smaller matters, for which whipping or some pecuniary mulct was imposed.

Secondly, There was a council consisting of three-and-twenty; seven of these were judges, fourteen assessors, who were mostly of the Levites; and to these were added two supernumeraries, which made the twenty-three, which the Hebrews generally say was the number that made up the second council. Now this council sat in the gates of the city, and did judge of civil matters, having also power of life and death, [Josephus.]

Thirdly, There was the great synedion, or high court of judicatory, which consisted of seventy-and-two, six chosen of every tribe. Now this council sat in the court of the temple, and had all matters of greatest moment brought before them, as heresy, idolatry, apostasy. Sometimes they convened before them the high priest, and sometimes false prophets, yea, sometimes a whole tribe, as my reverend author thinks, [Beza.] Now look, as there is a gradation of sin, so there is a gradation of punishment pointed at in this scripture; for the opening of which, consider you have here three degrees of secret murder, or of inward heart murder. And,

[1.] The first is rash anger. Now this brings a man in danger of the judgment. By the judgment he means not the judgment of the three, who judged of money matters, but by judgment he means the council of the three-and-twenty men. Now they are called ‘the judgment,’ because they judged of murders, and inflicted death, &c. Now he that shall rashly, vainly, causelessly, unseasonably be angry with his brother, he shall be liable to the punishments that are to be inflicted by the judges. Look, what punishments they in the Sanhedrim inflicted upon actual and apparent murderers, the same were they liable to, and did deserve at the hands of God, who were guilty of this secret kind of murder, viz., rash anger. From the different degrees of punishments among the Jews, Christ would shew the degrees of punishment in another world, according to the greatness of men’s sins. As if he should say: Look, as among you Jews there are different offences—some are judged in your little council of three, and others are judged in your council of three-and-twenty, and others in your great Sanhedrim—so in the high court of heaven, some sins, as rash anger, are less punished, and others are more sorely punished, as when your rash anger shall break forth into railings, &c. In these words, ‘Whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of judgment,’ you may see that Christ gives as much to rash anger as the Jews did to murder; as if he should have said, ‘You Pharisees exceed all measure and bounds in your anger, and, with a malicious heart, you rail upon the most innocent persons, upon me and my disciples; but I would have you take heed of rash anger, for you shall have greater torments

in hell for your rash anger than those that murderers suffer by your council of three-and-twenty.' But these words, 'he shall be in danger of judgment,' do contain the reward and punishment of unlawful anger; as if our Saviour had said, 'Rash anger shall not escape just punishment, but shall be arraigned and summoned before God's tribunal at the dreadful day of judgment, when the angry man shall not be able to answer one word of a thousand.'

[2.] The second kind of secret murder is to say to our brother, *Raca*, that is, say some, 'O vain man'! Others say, it signifies a brainless fellow; and the learned Tremellius saith, it signifies one void of judgment, reason, and brains. Some will have this word *Raca* come of the Greek *ράκος*, *Racos*, cloth, as though one should call a man a base patch, or piece of cloth, or beggarly.¹ *Raca* signifies an idle head, a light brain; for so *Rik* in the Hebrew, to which the Syriac word *Racha* agreeth both in sound and sense, signifieth light or vain. *Racha* is a Syriac word, and signifies, say some, these three things:—1. Empty, as empty of wealth, or poor; or as some, empty of brains or wit; or, as others, a light-head or cock-brain, wide² and empty of wisdom or understanding. 2. It signifies spittle or spit upon; to signify that they esteemed one another no better than the spittle they spat out of their mouths. 3. It signifies contemned, vile, despised, abject, and in this signification one, in his poem of the Syriac Grammar, [Michael Maronita,] thinks it to be taken. The Ethiopian expounds *Racha* thus, 'He that shall say to his brother, Be poor by contempt, and of torn garments, shall be guilty of the council;' such a one, saith our Saviour, 'shall be in danger of the council,' that is, contract as great guilt unto himself, and is subject to as severe a judgment in the court of heaven, as any capital crime that is censured in the Sanhedrim or high-court of the Jews. But,

[3.] The third kind of secret murder is an open reviling and reproaching of a brother in these words, 'But whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire.' 'Thou fool,' this is a word of greater disgrace than the former. *μωρὸς* signifies unsavoury, or without relish; a fool here is, by a metaphor, called insipid, Hebrew שוטה *Sote*, which we call *Sot*, 'shall be in danger of hell-fire,' or to be cast into Gehenna. Gehenna comes from the Hebrew word *Gettinnom*, that is, the valley of Hinnom, lying near the city of Jerusalem; in which valley, in former times, the idolatrous Jews caused their children to be burned alive between the glowing arms of the brazen image of Moloch, imitating the abominations of the heathen, Josh. xv. 8. And hence the Scripture often makes use of that word to signify the place of eternal punishment, where the damned must abide under the wrath of God for ever, 2 Kings xxiii. 10; Jer. vii. 31, xxxii. 35, and xix. 4, 5, 6. There were four kinds of punishments exercised among the Jews,—1. Stranglings; 2. The sword; 3. Stoning; 4. The fire. Now this last they always judged the worst, as Beza affirms upon this very place. In these words, 'shall be in danger of hell-fire,' Christ alludes

¹ Whether the word *Raca* be Hebrew, or as some say Syriac, or as others say Chaldee, it matters not; for all agree in this, that it is a word that notes scorn and contempt, &c.—*Vide* Lapide, Weemes, &c., on the Judicial Law of Moses, and Dr Field, 'Of the Church.'

² Query, 'void'?—ED.

to the great Sanhedrim, and the highest degree of punishment that was inflicted by them, namely, to be burned in the valley of Hinnom, which, by a known metaphor, is transferred to hell itself, and the inexpressible torments thereof. For as those poor wretches being inclosed in a brazen idol, heat with fire, were miserably tormented in this valley of Hinnom; so the wicked being cast into hell, the prison of the damned, shall be eternally tormented in unquenchable fire. This valley of Hinnom, by reason of the pollution of it with slaughter, blood, and stench of carcasses, did become so execrable, that hell itself did afterwards inherit the same name, and was called Gehenna of this very place. And that, 1. In respect of the hollowness and depth thereof, being a low and deep valley. 2. This valley of Hinnom was a place of misery, in regard of those many slaughters that were committed in it through their barbarous idolatry; so hell is a place of misery and infelicity, wherein there is nothing but sorrow. 3. Thirdly, by the bitter and lamentable cries of poor infants in this valley, is shadowed out the cries and lamentable torments of the damned in hell. 4. In this valley of Hinnom was another fire which was kept continually burning for the consuming of dead carcasses, and filth, and the garbage¹ that came out of the city. Now our Saviour, by the fire of Gehenna, in this Mat. v. 22, hath reference principally to this fire, signifying hereby the perpetuity and everlastingness of hellish pains. To this last judgment of the Sanhedrim, viz., burning, doth Christ appropriate that kind of murder, which is by open reviling of a brother, that he might notify the heinousness of that sin. Mark, in this scripture, judgment, council, and hell-fire do but signify three degrees of the same punishment, &c.

See also Mat. v. 29, 30, 'And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell-fire.' Julian, taking these commands literally, mocked at [the] Christian religion, as foolish, cruel, and vain, because they require men to maim their members. He mocked at Christians because no man did it; and he mocked at Christ because no man obeyed him. But this apostate might have seen from the scope that these words were not to be taken literally, but figuratively. Some of the ancients, by the right hand, and the right eye, do understand relations, friends, or any other dear enjoyments which draws the heart from God. Others of them, by the right eye, and the right hand, do understand such darling sins that are as dear to men as their right eyes or right hands. That this hell here spoken of is not meant of the grave, into which the body shall be laid, is most evident, because those Christians who do pull out their right eyes, and cut off their right hands—that is, mortify those special sins which are as dear and near to them as the very members of their bodies—shall be secured and delivered from this hell, whereas none shall be exempt from the grave, though they are the choicest persons on earth for grace and holiness. Death, like the Duke of Parma's

¹ Spelled 'garbidge.'—G.

sword, knows no difference betwixt robes and rags, betwixt prince and peasant. 'All flesh is grass,' Isa. xl. 6. The flesh of princes, nobles, counsellors, generals, &c., is grass, as well as the flesh of the meanest beggar that walks the streets. 'The mortal scythe,' saith one, 'is master of the royal sceptre, it mows down the lilies of the crown, as well as the grass of the field.'¹ Never was there orator so eloquent, nor monarch so potent, that could either persuade or withstand the stroke of death when it came. Death's motto is, *Nulli cedo*. It is one of Solomon's sacred aphorisms, 'The rich and the poor meet together,' Prov. xxii. 2, sometimes in the same bed, sometimes at the same board, and sometimes in the same grave. Death is the common inn of all mankind. 'There is no defence against the stroke of death, nor no discharge in that war,' Heb. ix. 27; Eccles. viii. 8. Death is that only king against whom there is no rising up, Prov. xxx. 31. If your houses be fired, by good help they may be quenched; if the sea break out, by art and industry it may be repaired; if princes invade by power and policy, they may be repulsed; if devils from hell shall tempt, by assistance from heaven they may be resisted. But death comes into royal palaces, and into the meanest cottages, and there is not a man to be found that can make resistance against this king of terrors and terror of kings. Death's motto is, *Nemini parco*, I spare none. Thus you see that by hell in Mat. v. 29, 30, you may not, you cannot, understand the grave; and therefore by it you must understand the place of the damned. But if you please you may cast your eye upon another scripture, viz., Mat. x. 28, 'Fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.' The word 'rather' is not a comparative, but an adversative. We should not fear man at all when he stands in competition with God. So Victorian, the proconsul of Carthage, being solicited to Arianism by the ambassadors of King Hunnerick, answered thus,² 'Being assured of God and my Lord Christ, I tell you, what you may tell the king, Let him burn me, let him drive me to the beasts, let him torment me with all kinds of torments, I shall never consent to be an Arian;' and though the tyrant afterwards did torture him with very great tortures, yet he could never work him over to Arianism. The best remedy against the slavish fear of tyrants, is to set that great God up as the object of our fear, who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. Mark, he doth not say to destroy soul and body simply or absolutely, so that they should be no more—for that many that love their lusts, and prize the world above a Saviour, would be contented withal, rather than to run the hazard of a fierce, hot persecution—but to punish them eternally in hell, where the worm never dieth, nor the fire never goeth out. Now by hell in this Mat. x. 28, the grave cannot be meant, because the soul is not destroyed with the body in the grave, as they both shall be, if the person be wicked, after the morning of the resurrection, in hell, Eccles. xii. 7, and Phil. i. 3. From the immortality of the soul, we may infer the eternity of man's future condition. The soul being immortal, it must be immortally happy or

¹ Horat. l. 1, Ode 28. [Qu. rather l. 1, Ode 4?—G.]

² Victor. Uticens. l. 3. Wandal. Persecut. [Clarke, as before.—G.]

immortally miserable. It was Luther's complaint of old, 'We more fear the pope, with his purgatory, than God, with his hell; and we trust more in the absolution of the pope from purgatory, than in the true absolution of God from hell.' And is it not so with many this day, who bear their heads high in the land, and who look and long for nothing more than to see Rome¹ flourishing in the midst of us?

Take one scripture more, viz., 1 Pet. iii. 19, 20, 'By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison; which sometimes were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah.'² That is, Christ by his Spirit, in the ministry of Noah, did preach to the men of the old world who are now in hell. In Noah's time they were on earth, but in Peter's time they were in hell. Mark, Christ did not preach by his Spirit, in his ministry, or any other way, to spirits who were in prison or in hell while he preached to them. There are no sermons in hell, nor any salvation there. The loving-kindness of God is abundantly declared on earth, but it shall never be declared in hell. Look, as there is nothing felt in hell but destruction, so there is nothing found in hell of the offers of salvation. One offer of Christ in hell would turn hell into a heaven. One of the ancients hath reported the opinion of some in his time who thought, that though there be destruction in hell, yet not eternal destruction, but that sinners should be punished, some a lesser, others a longer time, and that, at last, all shall be freed. 'And yet,' saith he, 'Origen was more merciful in that point than these men, for he held that the devil himself should be saved at last.' Of this opinion I shall say no more in this place, than this one thing which he there said. These men will be found to err by so much the more foully, and against the right words of God so much the more perversely, by how much they seem to themselves to judge more mercifully; for indeed the justice of God in punishing of sinners is as much above the reach of man's thoughts as his mercies in pardoning them are, Isa. lv. 7-9. Oh, let not such who have neglected the great salvation when they were on earth, Heb. ii. 3, ever expect to have an offer of salvation made to them when they are in hell! Consult these scriptures, Mat. xxv. 30, xiii. 41, 42; Rev. ix. 2, xiv. 19, 20, xx. 1-3, 7. I must make haste, and therefore may not stand upon the opening of these scriptures, having said enough already to prove both out of the Old and New Testament that there is a hell, a place of torment, provided and prepared for all wicked and ungodly men. But the third argument to prove that there is a hell, is this,—

[3.] *The beams of natural light in some of the heathens have made such impressions on the heart of natural conscience, that several of them have had confused notions of a hell, as well as of a judgment to come.* Though the poor blind heathens were ignorant of Christ

¹ Spelled 'Room,' and thereby showing the pronounciation of the day; on which, as illustrated by this word, see various communications in 'Notes and Queries' for 1866.—G.

² Spirits, that is, the souls departed, not men, but spirits, to keep an analogy to the 18th ver., 'Christ suffered, being made dead in the flesh, and made alive by the Spirit; in which Spirit he had gone and preached to them that are now spirits in prison, because they disobeyed, when the time was, when the patience of God once waited in the days of Noah.—Broughton, in his Epistle to the Nobility of England. *Augustine*, lib. i. *de civ. dei*. cap. 17.

and the gospel, and the great work of redemption, &c., yet by the light of nature, and reasonings from thence, they did attain to the understanding of a deity, who was both just and good; as also, that the soul was immortal, and that both rewards and punishments were prepared for the souls of men after this life, according as they were found either virtuous or vicious. Profound Bradwardine, and several others, have produced many proofs concerning their apprehensions of this truth.¹ What made the heathen Emperor Adrian when he lay a-dying, cry out, '*O animula vagula blandula,*' &c. O my little wretched wandering soul, whither art thou now hastening? &c. Oh, what will become of me! live I cannot, die I dare not! but some discoveries of hell, of wrath to come? Look, as these poor heathens did feign such a place as the Elysian fields, where the virtuous should spend an eternity in pleasures; so also they did feign a place called Tartarum, or hell, where the vicious should be eternally tormented. Tertullian, and after him Chrysostom, affirmeth that poets and philosophers, and all sorts of men, speaking of a future retribution, have said that many are punished in hell. Plato is very plain, that whoever are not expiated, but profane, shall go into hell to be tormented for their wickednesses, with the greatest, most bitter and terrible punishments, for ever in that prison in hell. And Jupiter, speaking to the other gods concerning the Grecians and Trojans, saith,—

If any shall so hardy be,
To aid each part in spite of me;
Him will I tumble down to hell,
In that infernal place to dwell.²

So Horace, speaking concerning Jove's thunderbolts, says,—

Quo bruta tellus et vaga flumina,
Quo Styx, et invisi horrida Tænari sedes, &c.
With which earth, seas, the Stygian lake,
And hell with all her furies quake.³

And Trismegistus affirms concerning the soul's going out of the body defiled, that it is tossed to and fro with eternal punishments.⁴ Nor was Virgil ignorant thereof when he said,—

Dent ocyus omnes,
Quas meruere pati—sic stat sententia—pœnas.
They all shall pack,
Sentence once past, to their deserved rack.⁵

The horror of which place he acknowledgeth he could not express,

Non mihi si linguæ centum sint, oraue centum, . . .
Omnia pœnarum percurrere nomina possim.
No heart of man can think, no tongue can tell,
The direful pains ordained and felt in hell.⁶

It was the common opinion among the poor heathen that the wicked were held in chains by Pluto—so they called the prince of devils—in

¹ Bradw. *de causa dei*. i. 1, cap. 1, &c.

² Iliad, viii. 10–13.—G.

³ Odes 1, 34, 10.—G.

⁴ One of the many opinions ascribed to Trismegistus, who, like Socrates, left no writings.—G.

⁵ Not Virgil, but Ovid, Met. viii. 3.—G.

⁶ Virgil—Æneid, vi. 625.—G.

chains which cannot be loosed. To conclude, the very Turks speak of the house of perdition, and affirm that they who have turned the grace of God into impiety, shall abide eternally in the fire of hell, and there be eternally tormented.¹ I might have spent much more time upon this head, but that I do not judge it expedient, considering the persons for whose sakes and satisfaction I have sent this piece into the world. But,

[4.] Fourthly, *The secret checks, gripes, stings, and the amazing horrors and terrors of conscience, that do sometimes astonish, affright, and even distract sinful wretches, do clearly and abundantly evidence that there is a hell, that there is a place of torment prepared and appointed for ungodly sinners.*² Doubtless, it was not merely the dissolution of nature, but the sad consequent, that so startled and terrified Belshazzar when he saw the handwriting on the wall, Dan. v. 5, 6. Guilty man, when conscience is awakened, fears an after-reckoning, when he shall be paid the wages of his crying sins proportionable to his demerits.

Wolfius³ tells you of one John Hufmeister that fell sick in his inn as he was travelling towards Augsburg in Germany, and grew to that horror that they were fain to bind him in his bed with chains, where he cried out that 'he was for ever cast off from before the face of God, and should perish for ever, he having greatly wounded his conscience by sin,' &c.

James Abyes, who suffered martyrdom for Christ's sake and the gospel's, as he was going along to execution he gave all his money and his clothes away to one and another to his shirt, upon which one of the sheriff's attendants scoffingly said that 'he was a madman and a heretic;' but as soon as the good man was executed this wretch was struck mad, and threw away his clothes, and cried out that 'James Abyes was a good man, and gone to heaven, but he was a wicked man, and was damned;' and thus he continued crying out until his death.⁴

Dionysius was so troubled with fear and horror of conscience, that, not daring to trust his best friends with a razor, he used to singe his beard with burning coals, [Cicero.]

Bessus having slain his father, and being afterwards banqueting with several nobles, arose from the table and beat down a swallow's nest which was in the chimney, saying they lied 'to say that he slew his father,' for his guilty conscience made him think that the swallows, when they chattered, proclaimed his parricide to the world.⁵

Theodoricus the king having slain Boetius and Symmachus, and being afterwards at dinner, began to change countenance, his guilty conscience so blinding his eyes that he thought the head of a fish which stood before him to have been the head of his cousin Symmachus, who bit his lip at him and threatened him, the horror whereof did so amaze him that he presently died.⁶

¹ Alcoran, Mahom. c. 14, p. 160, and c. 20, p. 198.

² *Sua quemque exagitant furie*, Every man is tormented with his own fury, that is, his conscience, saith the philosopher.

³ Wolf. Lectiones, Memor. tom. 2, &c.

⁴ Foxe, as before.—G.

⁵ Plut. *de sera [numinis] vindicata*. [Misprinted 'Bossus,' cf. Plutarch, *Alexander*, 42, 43, &c.—G.]

⁶ Sigonius *de occid. Imper.*

Nero, that monster of nature, having once slain his mother, had never more any peace within, but was astonished with horrors, fears, visions, and clamours which his guilty conscience set before him and suggested unto him. *Imo latens in prædio, familiares suspectos habuit, vocem humanam horruit, ad catuli latratum, galli cantum, rami ex vento motum, terrebatur; loqui non ausus, ne audiretur*: He suspected his nearest and dearest friends and favourites, he trembled at the barking of a puppy, and the crowing of a cock, yea, the wagging of a leaf, and neither durst speak unto others nor could endure others to speak to him, when he was retired into a private house, lest the noise should be heard by some who lay in wait for his life.¹

Now were there not a hell, were there not a place of torment where God will certainly inflict unspeakable miseries and intolerable torments upon wicked and ungodly men, why should their consciences thus amaze, torture, and torment them? Yea, the very heathen had so much light in their natural consciences, as made such a discovery of that place of darkness, that some of them have been terrified with their own inventions concerning it, and distracted with the very sense of those very torments which their own persons have described. As Pygmalion doted on his own picture, so were they amazed with their own comments. The very flashes of hell-fire which sinners do daily experience in their own consciences in this world, may be an argument sufficient to satisfy them that there is a hell, a place of torment provided for them in another world.

[5.] Fifthly, *Those matchless, easeless, and endless torments that God will certainly inflict upon the bodies and souls of all wicked and ungodly men, after the resurrection, does sufficiently evidence that there is a hell, that there is a place of torment provided, prepared, and fitted by God, wherein he will, 'pour forth all the vials of his wrath upon wicked and ungodly men.'* Isa. xxx. 33, 'For Tophet is ordained of old, yea, for the king it is prepared; he hath made it deep and large, the pile thereof is fire and much wood, the breath of the Lord like a stream of brimstone doth kindle it.' This place that was so famous for judgment and vengeance is used to express the torments of hell, the place of the damned. Tophet was a place in the valley of Hinnom; it was the place where the angel of the Lord destroyed the host of Sennacherib, king of Assyria, Isa. xxx. 31, 33; and this was the place where the idolatrous Jews were slain and massacred by the Babylonian armies, when their city was taken and their carcasses left, for want of room for burial, for meat to the fowls of heaven and beasts of the field, according to the word of the Lord by the prophet Jeremiah, Jer. vii. 31-33, and xix. 4-6. And this was the place where the children of Israel committed that abominable idolatry in making their children pass through the fire to Moloch; that is, burnt them to the devil, 2 Kings xxiii. 10; 2 Chron. xxxiii. 6; for an eternal destruction whereof king Josiah polluted it, and made it a place execrable, ordaining it to be the place whither dead carcasses, garbage, and other unclean things should be cast out. For consuming whereof, to prevent annoyance, a continual fire was there burning, 2 Kings xxxiii. 8. Now this place, being so many ways execrable for what had been

¹ Xiphil. in Nerone, &c. [Xipilinus of Trapezus, abridgment of Dion. Cassius.—G.]

done therein, especially having been as it were the gate to eternal destruction, by so remarkable judgments and vengeance of God there executed for sin, it came to be translated to signify the place of the damned, as the most accursed, execrable, and abominable place of all places. The Spirit of God, in Scripture, by metaphors of all sorts of things that are dreadful unto sense, sets forth the condition of the damned, and the torments that he has reserved for them in the life to come. Hell's punishments do infinitely exceed all other punishments; no pain so extreme as that of the damned. Look, as there are no joys to the joys of heaven, so there are no pains to the pains of hell, Ps. cxvi. 3. All the cruelties in the world cannot possibly make up any horror comparable to the horrors of hell. The brick-kilns of Egypt, the furnace of Babel,¹ are but as the glowing sparkle, or as the blaze of a brush-faggot, to this tormenting Tophet that has been prepared of old to punish the bodies and souls of sinners with. Hanging, racking, burning, scourging, stoning, sawing asunder, flaying of the skin, &c., are not to be named in the day wherein the tortures of hell are spoken of. If all the pains, sorrows, miseries, and calamities that have been inflicted upon all the sons of men, since Adam fell in Paradise, should meet together and centre in one man, they would not so much as amount to one of the least of the pains of hell. Who can sum up the diversity of torments that are in hell! In hell there is, 1. Darkness; hell is a dark region. 2. In hell there are sorrows. 3. In hell there are bonds and chains. 4. In hell there is pains and pangs. 5. In hell there is the worm that never dies. 6. In hell there is a lake of fire. 7. In hell there is a furnace of fire. 8. In hell there is the devil and his angels; and oh, how dreadful must it be to be shut up for ever with those roaring lions! 9. In hell there is weeping and gnashing of teeth.² Certainly, did men believe the torments of hell, that weeping for extremity of heat, and that gnashing of teeth that is there for extremity of cold, they would never offer to fetch profits or pleasures out of those flames.³ 10. In hell there is unquenchable fire, Mat. iii. 12, 'He will burn the chaff with unquenchable fire;' in hell there is 'everlasting burnings,' Isa. xxxiii. 14. 'The sinners in Zion are afraid, fearfulness hath surprised the hypocrites; who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? who among us shall dwell with everlasting burnings?' Wicked men, who are now the only jolly fellows of the time, shall one day go from burning to burning; from burning in sin to burning in hell; from burning in flames of lusts to burning in flames of torment, except there be found true repentance on their sides, and pardoning grace on God's.⁴ O sirs! in this devouring fire, in these everlasting burnings, Cain shall find no cities to build, nor his posterity shall have no instruments of music to invent there; none shall take up the timbrel or harp, or rejoice at the sound of the organ. There Belshazzar

¹ Babylon.—G.

² Jude 13; Ps. cxvi. 3; 2 Pet. ii. 4; Jude 6; Mark ix. 44; Rev. xx. 15; Mat. xiii. 41, 42, xxv. 41, xxiv. 51, xxv. 30, xiii. 42.

³ Who would give, saith Bernard, to my eyes a fountain of tears, that by my weeping here I may prevent weeping and gnashing of teeth hereafter. Some devout personages have caused this scripture to be writ in letters of gold upon their chimney-pieces.—Bishop of Belly in France in his 'Draught of Eternity.' [Camus, as before.—G.]

⁴ Gen. iv. 17; Amos vi. 7; Job xxi. 12; Dan. v. 21; Amos vi. 4.

cannot drink wines in bowls, nor eat the lambs out of the flocks, nor the calves out of the midst of the stall. In everlasting burnings there will be no merry company to pass time away, nor no dice nor cards to pass care away; nor no cellars of wine wherein to drown the sinner's grief. By fire in the scriptures last cited, is meant, as I conceive, all the positive part of the torments of hell; and because they are not only upon the soul but also upon the body. As in heaven there shall be all bodily perfection, so there shall be also in hell all bodily miseries. Whatsoever may make a man perfectly miserable shall be in hell; therefore the wrath of God and all the positive effects of this wrath is here meant by fire.

I have read of Pope Clement the Fifth, that when a nephew of his, whom he had loved sensually and sinfully, died, he sent his chaplain to a necromancer to learn how it fared with him in the other world. The conjuror shewed him the chaplain lying in a fiery bed in hell; which when it was told the Pope, he never joyed more after it, but, within a short time after, died also.¹ Out of this fiery bed there is no deliverance. When a sinner is in hell, shall another Christ be found to die for him, or will the same Christ be crucified again? Oh, no!

O sirs, the torments of hell will be exceeding great and terrible, such as will make the stoutest sinners to quake and tremble! If the handwriting upon the wall, *Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin*, made Belshazzar's 'countenance to change, his thoughts to be troubled, and his joints to be loosed, and his knees to be dashed one against another,' Dan. v. 5, vi. 25; oh, how terrible will the torments of hell be to the damned! The torments of hell will be universal torments. All torments meet together in that place of torment. Hell is the centre of all punishments, of all sorrows, of all pains, of all wrath, and of all vengeance, &c. One of the ancients saith, [Bernard,] that the least punishment in hell is more grievous than if a child-bearing woman should continue in the most violent pangs and throes a thousand years together, without the least ease or intermission.

An ancient writer mentioned by Discipulus, *de tempore*, goeth much further, affirming that if all the men which have been from Adam's time till this day, and which shall be to the end of the world; and all the piles of grass in the world were turned into so many men to augment the number; and that punishment inflicted in hell upon any one, were to be divided amongst all these, so as to every one might befall an equal part of that punishment; yet that which would be the portion of one man would be far more grievous than all the cruel deaths and exquisite tortures which have been inflicted upon men ever since the world began.² A heathen poet, speaking of the multitude of the pains and torments of the wicked in hell, affirmed,

¹ Jac. Reu. Hist. Pontif. Rom. 199 [*sic*: but Query, 'Platina Historia de Vitis Pontificum Romanorum. Colon: 1626, 40'—G.]

² *Tytlus* his vulture, though feeding on his liver, is but a flea-biting to the gnawing worm that is in hell [Qu. 'Prometheus the *Titan*'?—G.]—Ixion his wheel is a place of rest, if compared with those billows of wrath, and that wheel of justice which is in hell brought over the ungodly [Cf. Schol. *ad Hom.*: Od. xxi. 303; Serv. *ad Virgil*, *Æn.* vi. 601; Georg. iii. 38, iv. 484.—G.]—The lash of Danaüs his daughters is but a sport compared to the torture of the damned in hell [Pindar. *Nem.* x. 7; Ovid: *Met.* iv. 462; Horat. *Carm.* iii. 11, &c.—G.]

‘that although he had a hundred mouths, and as many tongues, with a voice as strong as iron, yet were they not able to express the names of them.’ But this poet spoke more like a prophet than a poet. The poets tell you of a place called *Tartarum*, or hell, where the impious shall be eternally tormented. This *Tartarum* the poets did set forth with many fictions to affright people from vicious practices, such as of the four lakes of Acheron, Styx, Phlegethon, and Coeetus;¹ over which Charon, in his boat, did waft over the departed souls; of the three judges, Æacus, Minos, and Rhadamanthus,² who were to call the souls to an account, and judge them to their state; of the three furies, Tisiphone, Megæra, and Alecto, who lashed guilty souls to extort confession from them;³ of Cerberus, the dog of hell, with three heads, which would let none come out when once they were in; and of several sorts of punishments inflicted, as iron chains, horrid stripes, gnawing of vultures, wheels, rolling great stones, and the like. In the chapel of *Ticam*, the China Pluto, the pains of hell were so deciphered that could not but strike terror into the beholders,—some roasted in iron beds, some fried in scalding oil, some cut in pieces, or divided in the middle, or torn of dogs, &c. In another part of the chapel were painted the dungeons of hell, with horrible serpents, flames, devils, &c.⁴

‘In hell,’ saith Mahomet, [Alcoran, &c.,] ‘there is the floor of brimstone, smoky, pitchy, with stinking flames, deep pits of scalding pitch, and sulphurous flames wherein the damned are punished daily.’ There the wicked shall be fed with the tree *Ezeccum*, which shall burn in their bellies like fire; there they shall drink fire, and be holden in chains of seventy cubits. In the midst of hell, they say, is a tree full of fruit, every apple being like to the head of a devil, which groweth green in the midst of all those flames, called *Zoaccum Agacci*, or the tree of bitterness; and the souls that shall eat thereof, thinking to refresh themselves, shall so find them, and by them and their pains in hell, they shall grow mad, and the devils shall bind them with chains of fire, and shall drag them up and down in hell; with much more which I am not free to transcribe. Now, although most of those things which you may find among many poets, heathens, and Turks, concerning the torments of hell, are fictions of their own brains; yet that there is such a place as hell, and that there are diversity of torments there, the very light of nature doth witness, and hath forced many to confess, &c.

And as there are diversity of torments in hell, so the torments of hell are everlasting. Mark, everything that is conducive to the torments of the damned is eternal. 1. God himself that damns them is eternal, Deut. xxxiii. 27; 1 Tim. i. 17. 2. The fire that torments them is eternal, Isa. xxx. 33, and lxvi. 24; Jude 7. 3. The prison and chains that hold them are eternal, Jude 6, 7, 13; 2 Pet. ii. 17. 4.

¹ Homer: Od. x. 513; cf. Paus. i. 17, sec. 5. Rather Pyriphlegeton.—G.

² Æacus: Ovid, Met. xiii. 25; Horat, Carm. ii. 13, 22; Plato, Gorg. and Apolog.—Minos: Homer, Il. xiii. 450, xiv. 322; Od. xi. 321, 567, xvii. 523, xix. 178.—Rhadamanthus: Apollod. iii. 1, sec. 2, ii. 4, sec. 11; Hom. Od. iv. 564, vii. 323; Pindar. ol. ii. 137.—G.

³ Rather Tisiphone: Orph. Arg. 966. Megæra and Alecto; Orph. Hymn 68; Virg. Æn. xii. 845; Cerberus: Hom. Il. viii. 368; Od. xi. 623.—G.

⁴ Purchas his Pilgrims, 3d vol., pp. 407, 408.

The worm that gnaws them is eternal, Mark ix. 44. 5. The sentence that shall be passed upon them shall be eternal, Mat. xxv. 41, 'Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire.' You know that fire is the most tormenting element.¹ Oh, the most dreadful impression that it makes upon the flesh, everlasting fire! There is the vengeance and continuance of it, You shall go into fire, into everlasting fire, that shall never consume itself, nor consume you. Eternity of eternity is the hell of hell. The fire in hell is like that stone in Arcadia, which being once kindled could never be quenched. If all the fires that ever were, or shall be in the world, were contracted into one fire, how terrible would it be! Yet such a fire would be but as a painted fire upon the wall, to the fire of hell. For to be tormented without end, this is that which goes beyond all the bounds of desperation. Grievous is the torment of the damned, for the bitterness of the punishments, but it is more grievous for the diversity of the punishments, but most grievous for the eternity of the punishments.² If, after so many millions of years as there be drops in the ocean, there might be a deliverance out of hell, this would yield a little ease, a little comfort to the damned. Oh, but this word *eternity, eternity, eternity*; this word *everlasting, everlasting, everlasting*; this word *for ever, for ever, for ever*, will even break the hearts of the damned in ten thousand pieces! Oh, that word *never*, said a poor despairing creature on his death-bed, breaks my heart. 'The reprobate shall have punishment without pity; misery without mercy, sorrow without succour, crying without compassion, mischief without measure, and torment without end,' [Drexelius.] Plato could say, 'That whoever are not expiated, but profane, shall go into hell, to be tormented for their wickedness, with the greatest, the most bitter and terrible punishments for ever in that prison of hell.' And Trismegistus could say, 'That souls going out of the body defiled, were tossed to and fro with eternal punishments.' Yea, the very Turks, speaking of the house of perdition, do affirm, 'That they who have turned God's grace into wantonness, shall abide eternally in the fire of hell, and there be eternally tormented.'³ A certain religious man going to visit Olympius, who lived cloistered up in a dark cell, which he thought uninhabitable, by reason of heat, and swarms of gnats and flies, and asking him how he could endure to live in such a place, he answered, 'All this is but a light matter, that I may escape eternal torments: I can endure the stinging of gnats, that I might not endure the stinging of conscience, and the gnawing of that worm that never dies; this heat thou thinkest grievous, I can easily endure, when I think of the eternal fire of hell; these sufferings are but short, but the sufferings of hell are eternal.'⁴ Certainly, infernal fire is neither tolerable nor terminable. Impenitent sinners in hell shall have end without end, death without death, night without day, mourning without mirth, sorrow without solace, and bondage without liberty. The damned shall live as long in hell as God himself shall live in heaven.

¹ Melancthon calls it a hellish fury. Of this fire, see more in my 'London's Lamentation on the late Fiery Dispensation,' part ii. page 105-131. [Vol. vi.—G.]

² Dionys. in 18. Apocalyp. fol. 301.

³ Alcoran Mabom. c. xiv. p. 160, &c.; c. xx. p. 198, &c.

⁴ There is no Christian which doth not believe the fire of hell to be everlasting. Dr Jackson on the Creed, lib. xi. c. 23.

Their imprisonment in that land of darkness, in that bottomless pit, is not an imprisonment during the king's pleasure, but an imprisonment during the everlasting displeasure of the King of kings. Suppose, say some, that the whole world were turned to a mountain of sand, and that a little wren should come every thousand year and carry away from that heap one grain of sand, what an infinite number of years, not to be numbered by all finite beings, would be spent and expired, before this supposed mountain could be fetched away ! Now if a man should lie in everlasting burnings so long a time, and then have an end of his woe, it would administer some ease, refreshment, and comfort to him ; but when that immortal bird shall have carried away this supposed mountain, a thousand times over and over, alas, alas, sinful man shall be as far from the end of his anguish and torment as ever he was ; he shall be no nearer a-coming out of hell, than he was the very first moment that he entered into hell.¹ If the fire of hell were terminable, it might be tolerable ; but being endless, it must needs be easeless, and remediless. We may well say of it, as one doth, Oh, killing life ! oh, immortal death !²

Suppose, say others, that a man were to endure the torments of hell as many years, and no more, as there be sands on the sea-shore, drops of water in the sea, stars in heaven, leaves on trees, piles of grass on the ground, hairs on his head, yea, upon the heads of all the sons of Adam that ever were or are, or shall be in the world, from the beginning of it to the end of it, yet he would comfort himself with this poor thought, Well, there will come a day when my misery and torment shall certainly have an end. But woe and alas, this word, 'never, never, never,' will fill the hearts of the damned with the greatest horror and terror, wrath and rage, amazement, and astonishment.

Suppose, say others, that the torments of hell were to end, after a little bird should have emptied the sea, and only carry out her bill-full once in a thousand years. Suppose, say others, that the whole world, from the lowest earth to the highest heavens, were filled with grains of sand, and once in a thousand years an angel should fetch away one grain, and so continue till the whole heap were spent. Suppose, say others, if one of the damned in hell, should weep after this manner, viz., that he should only let fall one tear in a thousand years, and these should be kept together, till such time as they should equal the drops of water in the sea ; how many millions of ages would pass, before they could make up one river, much more a whole ; and when that were done, should he weep again after the same manner, till he had filled a second, a third, and a fourth sea. If then there should be an end of their miseries, there would be some hope, some comfort, that they would end at last ; but that they shall never, never end, this is that which sinks them under the most tormenting terrors and horrors.

You know that the extremity and eternity of hellish torments is set forth by the worm that never dies ; and it is observable that Christ, at the close of his sermon, makes a threefold repetition of this worm :

¹ An often recurring illustration with the Mediæval preachers ; as are also those that follow.—G.

² Bellar. de arte moriendi, lib. ii. c. 3.

Mark ix. 44, 'where their worm dieth not;' and again, ver. 46, 'where their worm dieth not;' and again, ver. 48, 'where their worm dieth not, and their fire goeth not out.' Certainly, those punishments are beyond all conception and expression, which our Lord Jesus doth so often inculcate within so small a space.

Now if there be such a diversity, extremity, and eternity of hellish pains and torments, which the great God will certainly inflict upon the bodies and souls of all impenitent persons, after the day of judgment; then there must certainly be some hell, some place of torment, wherein the wrath of God shall be executed upon wicked and ungodly men. But,

[6.] Sixthly, *The greatest part of wicked and ungodly men escape unpunished in this world.* The greatest number of men do spend their days in pride, ease, pleasures, and delights, in lust and luxury, in voluptuousness and wantonness: 'They take the timbrel and harp, and rejoice to the sound of the organ;' 'They chant to the sound of the viol, and invent to themselves instruments of music;' 'They drink wine in bowls;' 'They lie upon beds of ivory, and stretch themselves upon their couches, and eat the lambs out of the flock, and the calves out of the midst of the stall;' and therefore there will be a time when these shall be punished in another world, Ps. lxxiii. 3-13; Job xxi. 12; Amos v. 6.

God doth not punish all here, that he may make way for the displaying of his mercy and goodness, his patience and forbearance. Nor doth he forbear all here, that he may manifest his justice and righteousness, lest the world should turn atheist, and deny his providence, Rom. ii. 4, 5; 2 Pet. iii. 9-15. He spares that he may punish, and he punisheth that he may spare. God smites some sinners in the very acting of their sins, as he did Korah, Dathan, and Abiram, and others, Num. xvi.; not till they have filled up the measure of their sins, as you see in the men of the old world, Gen. vi. 5-7. But the greatest number of sinners God reserves for the great day of his wrath, Mat. vii. 13. There is a sure punishment, though not always a present punishment, for every sinner, Eccles. viii. 12, 13. Those wicked persons which God suffers to go uncorrected here, he reserves to be punished for ever hereafter, 2 Thes. i. 7-10. Sinners, know your doom,—you must either smart for your sins in this world, or in the world to come. That ancient hit the mark that said, 'Many sins are punished in this world, that the providence of God might be more apparent; and many, yea, most, reserved to be punished in the world to come, that we might know that there is yet judgment behind.'¹

Sir James Hamilton, having been murdered by the Scottish king's means, he appeared to the king in a vision, with a naked sword drawn, and strikes off both his arms, with these words, 'Take this, before thou receivest a final payment for all thy impieties;' and within twenty-four hours two of the king's sons died.² If the glutton in that historical parable being in hell, Luke xvi. 22-24, only in part, to wit, in soul, yet cried out that he 'was horribly tormented in that flame,' what think ye shall that torment be when body and soul come to be united

¹ Augustine, Epist. 54.

² Mr Knox in his History of Scotland. [See Laing's 'Works' of Knox, s. n.—G.]

for torture ! It being just with God, that as they have been, like Simeon and Levi, brethren in iniquity, and have sinned together desperately and impenitently, so they should suffer together jointly, eternally, Gen. xlix. 5. The Hebrew doctors have a pretty parable to this purpose : A man planted an orchard, and going from home, was careful to leave such watchmen as both might keep it from strangers and not deceive him themselves ; therefore he appointed one blind, but strong of his limbs, and the other seeing, but a cripple. These two, in their master's absence, conspired together ; and the blind took the lame on his shoulders, and so gathered the fruit. Their master returning, and finding out this subtlety, punished them both together. So shall it be with those two sinful yoke-fellows, the soul and the body, in the great day ; they have sinned together, and they shall suffer at last together, 2 Cor. v. 10, 11. But now in this world the greatest number of transgressors do commonly escape all sorts of punishments ; and therefore we may safely conclude that there is another world, wherein the righteous God will revenge upon the bodies and souls of sinners the high dishonours that have been done to his name by them. But,

[7.] *Seventhly, In all things natural, and supernatural, there is an opposition and contrariety.* There is good, and there is evil ; there is light and darkness, joy and sorrow. Now as there are two several ways, so there are two distinct ends : Heaven, a place of admirable and inexpressible happiness, whither the good angels convoy the souls of the saints who have, by a holy conversation, glorified God, and adorned their profession, Luke xvi. 22 ; and hell, a place of horror and confusion, whither the evil angels do hurry the souls of wicked, incorrigible, and impenitent wretches, when they are once separated from their bodies. 'The rich man also died and was buried ; and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments,' ver. 22, 23 ; 'and these shall go away into everlasting punishment, and the righteous into life eternal,' Mat. xxv. 46. In these words we have described the different estate of the wicked and the righteous after judgment, 'They shall go away into everlasting punishment, but these into life eternal.' After the sentence is past, the wicked go into everlasting punishment, and the righteous into life eternal. Everlasting punishment, the end thereof is not known, its duration is undetermined. Hell is a bottomless pit, and therefore shall never be fathomed. It is an unquenchable fire, and therefore the smoke of their torments doth ascend for ever and ever, Rev. xiv. 11. Hell is a prison from whence is no freedom, because there is no ransom to be paid. No price will be accepted for one in that estate. And as there is no end of the punishments of hell, into which the wicked must enter, so there is no end of the joys of heaven, into which the saints must enter. 'In thy presence is fulness of joy, and at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore,' Ps. xvi. 11. Here is as much said as can be said, for quality, there is in heaven joy and pleasures ; for quantity, a fulness, a torrent ; for constancy, it is at God's right hand ; and for perpetuity, it is for evermore. The joys of heaven are without measure, mixture, or end. Thus you see that there are two distinct ends, two distinct places, to which the wicked and the righteous go. And, indeed, if this were not

so, then Nero would be as good a man as Paul, and Esau as happy a man as Jacob, and Cain as blessed a man as Abel. Then as believers say, 'If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable,' 1 Cor. xv. 19; because none out of hell ever suffered more, if so much, as the saints have done; so might the wicked say, 'If in this life only we were miserable, we were then of all men most happy.' But,

[8.] Eighthly, and lastly, *You know that all the princes of the world, for their greater grandeur and state, as they have their royal palaces for themselves, their nobles and attendants, so they have their jails, prisons, and dark dungeons for rogues and robbers, for malefactors and traitors.* And shall not he who is the King of kings and Lord of lords, Rev. xix. 16; he who is the Prince of the kings of the earth, Rev. i. 5; he who removeth kings and setteth up kings, Dan. ii. 21; shall not he have his royal palace, a glorious heaven, where he and all his noble attendants, angels, and saints shall live for ever? Shall not the great king have his royal and magnificent court in that upper world, as poor petty princes have theirs in this lower world? Surely he shall, as you may see by comparing the scriptures in the margin together.¹ And shall not the same great King have his hell, his prison, his dungeon, to secure and punish impenitent sinners in? Surely yes. And doubtless, the least glimpse of this hell, of this place of torment, would strike the proudest, and the stoutest sinners dead with horror. O sirs! they that have seen the flames, and heard the roarings of Ætna, the flashing of Vesuvius, the thundering and burning flakes evaporating from those marine rocks, have not yet seen, no, not so much as the very glimmering of hell. A painted fire is a better shadow of these, than these can be of hell torments, and the miseries of the damned therein. Now these eight arguments are sufficient to demonstrate that there is a hell, a place of torment, to which the wicked shall be sent at last. Now certainly, Socinians, atheists, and all others that are men of corrupt minds, and that believe that there is no hell, but what they carry about with them in their own consciences; these are worse than those poor Indians that hold that there are thirteen hells,² according to the differing demerits of men's sins; yea, they are worse than devils, for they believe and tremble, James ii. 19. *φρίσσουνσι*; this Greek word signifies to roar as the sea; from thence, saith Eustatius, it is translated to the hideous clashing of armour in the battle. The original word seemeth to imply an extreme fear, which causeth not only tremblings, but also a roaring and shrieking out. Their hearts ache and quake within them, they quiver and shake as men do when their teeth chatter in their heads in extreme cold weather, Mark vi. 49, and Acts xvi. 29. The devils acknowledge four articles of our faith: Mat. viii. 29, 'And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we do with thee, Jesus, thou son of God? Art thou come hither to torment us before the time.' 1. They acknowledge God; 2. Christ; 3. The day of judgment; 4. That they shall be tormented then. They who scorn the day of judgment are worse than devils; and they who deny the deity of Christ are worse than devils,

¹ Eph. ii. 3 John xiv. 1-4 Luke xii. 32; Neh. ix. 6; 1 Kings viii. 27; Heb. viii. 1; Rev. iii. 21.

² Purchas his Pilgrimage.

[Piscator.] The devils are, as it were, for a time respited and reprieved, in respect of full torment, and they are suffered as free prisoners to flutter in the air, and to course about the earth till the great day of the Lord, which they tremble to think on; and which they that mock at, or make light of, are worse than devils. The devils knew that torments were prepared for them, and a time when these torments should be fully and fatally inflicted on them, and loath they were to suffer before that time. Ah, sirs, shall not men tremble to deny what the devils are forced to confess! Shall I now make a few short inferences from what has been said, and so conclude this head?

1. First, then, *Oh labour to set up God as the great object of your fear.* This grand lesson Christ commands us to take out, 'Fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell; yea, I say unto you, fear him,' Mat. x. 28. Christ doubles the precept, that it might stick with more life and power upon us, Luke xii. 5. As one fire, so one fear, drives out another. Both the punishment of loss and the punishment of sense may be the objects of a filial fear, the fear of a son, of a saint, of a soul that is espoused and married to Christ. The fear of God, and the fear of sin, will drive out the fear of death, and the fear of hell, 2 Cor. xi. 2; Hos. ii. 19, 20. O sirs, will you not fear that God that hath the keys of hell and death in his own hand, that can speak you into hell at pleasure, that can by a word of command bring you to dwell with a devouring fire, yea, to dwell with everlasting burnings? Rev. i. 18.

Ah, friends, will you fear a burning fever, and will you not fear a burning in hell? Will you fear when the house you live in is on fire, and when the bed you lie on is on fire, though it may be quenched, and will you not fear that fire that is unquenchable? Isa. xxxiii. 14. When men run through the streets and cry, Fire, fire, fire! how do your hearts quake and tremble in you; and will you not fear the fire of hell? will you not fear everlasting fire? Mat. iii. 12, xxv. 41. Sir Francis Bacon, in his history of Henry the Seventh,¹ relates how it was a by-word of the Lord Cordes, who was a profane, popish, atheistical French lord, that he could be content to lie seven years in hell, so he might win Calais from the English; but had this popish lord lain but seven minutes under unsupportable torments, he would quickly have repented of his mad bargain. It was good counsel that one of the ancients gave, *Descendamus in infernum viventes, ne descendamus morientes*, Let us go into hell while we are alive, by a serious meditation and holy consideration, that we may not go into it when we be dead, by real miseries, [Bernard.] God can kill, and more than that, he can cast into hell. Here is both temporal and eternal destruction, both rods and scorpions. He can kill the body, and then damn both body and soul, and cast them into hell; and therefore it becomes every one to set up God as the great object of their fear. Yea, I say unto you, fear him; yea, I say unto you, fear him. This redoubling of the speech adds a greater enforcement to the admonition. It is like the last stroke of the hammer, that rivets and drives up all to the head. Thus David uses this ingemination, 'Thou, even thou, art to be feared,

¹ As before. See Index sub nomine.—G.

and who may stand in thy sight; when thou art angry, thou canst look them to death, yea, to hell,' Ps. lxxvi. 7. And it is worth the observing, that this ingemination and reinforcement here annexed is to the affirmative clause, not to the negative. Our Saviour saith not, 'Yea, I say unto you, fear not them;' but he places the reduplication upon the affirmative precept, 'I say unto you, fear him.' O sirs, temporal judgments are but the smoke of his anger, but in hell there are the flames of his anger. That fire burns fiercely, and there is no quenching of it. Excuse me, saith the father, thou breakest¹ bonds and imprisonments, O emperor, but God's threatenings are much more terrible. He threatens hell torments and everlasting damnation; and certainly, where there is the greatest danger, there it is fit that there should be the greatest dread. But,

2. Secondly, Then *flee from the wrath to come*, Mat. iii. 7.² O sirs, that you would seriously and frequently dwell upon those short hints!

[1.] Wrath to come is *the greatest wrath, it is the greatest evil that can befall a soul*. 'Who knows the power of thy wrath?' Ps. xix. 11. Wrath to come is such wrath as no man can either avoid or abide, and yet such is most men's stupidity, that they will not believe it till they feel it. As God is a great God, so his wrath is a great wrath. I may allude to that which Zebah and Zalmunna said to Gideon, 'As the man is, so is his strength,' Judges viii. 21. So may I say, as the Lord is, so is his wrath. The wrath of an earthly king is compared to the roaring of a lion, Prov. xix. 12; *Heb.*, of a young lion, which, being in his prime, roars most terribly. He roars with such a force that he amazes the creatures whom he hunts, so as that they have no power to fly from him. Now if the wrath of a king be so terrible, oh how dreadful must the wrath of the King of kings then be! The greater the evil is, the more cause we have to flee from it. Now wrath to come is the greatest evil, and therefore the more it concerns us to flee from it, Rev. xvii. 14. But,

[2.] Secondly, Wrath to come is *treasured-up wrath*. Sinners are still 'a-treasuring up wrath against the day of wrath,' Rom. ii. 5. In treasuring there is, 1. Laying in; 2. Lying hid; 3. Bringing out again as there is occasion.

Whilst wicked men are following their own lusts, they think that they are still adding to their own happiness; but alas, they do but add wrath to wrath, they do but heap up judgment upon judgment, punishment upon punishment. Look, as men are daily adding to their treasure more and more, so impenitent sinners are daily increasing the treasures of wrath against their own souls. Now, who would not flee from treasures of wrath? But,

[3.] Thirdly, Wrath to come is *pure wrath*. It is 'judgment without mercy,' James ii. 13. The cup of wrath which God will put into sinners' hands at last will be a cup of pure wrath, all wrath, nothing but wrath, Rev. xiv. 10, 'The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone

¹ Query, 'threatenest'?—Ed.

² Though destruction by the Romans is not here excluded, yet the principal thing that he means by wrath to come is hell-fire, Mat. xxiii. 33.

in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the lamb.¹ Look, as there is nothing but the pure glory of God that can make a man perfectly and fully happy, so there is nothing but the pure wrath of God that can make a man fully and perfectly miserable. Reprobates shall not only sip of the top of God's cup, but they shall drink the dregs of his cup. They shall not have at last one drop of mercy, nor one crumb of comfort. They have filled up their lifetime with sin, and God will fill up their eternity with torments. But,

[4.] Fourthly and lastly, As wrath to come is pure wrath, so wrath to come is *everlasting wrath*: Rev. xiv. 11, 'And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever.' 'Would to God,' saith one, [Chrysostom,] 'men would everywhere think and talk more of hell, and of that eternity of extremity, that they shall never else be able to avoid, or to abide.' See the scriptures in the margin.² 'The damned,' saith Gregory, 'shall suffer an end without end, a death without death, a decay without decay; for their death ever liveth, their end ever beginneth, their decay never ceaseth, they are ever healed to be new wounded, and always repaired to be new devoured; they are ever dying and never dead, eternally broiling and never burnt up, ever roaring in the pangs of death, and never rid of those pangs; for they shall have punishment without pity, misery without mercy, sorrow without succour, crying without comfort, mischief without measure, and torment without ease, "where the worm dieth not, and the fire is never quenched."' The torments of the damned shall continue as many worlds as there be stars in the firmament, as there be grains of sand on the sea-shore, and as there be drops of water found in the sea; and when these worlds are ended, the pains and torments of hell shall not cease, but begin afresh, and thus this wheel shall turn round without end.

Oh the folly and vanity, the madness and baseness of poor wretched sinners who expose themselves to everlasting torments for a few fleshly momentary pleasures! O sirs! who can stand before his indignation, and who can abide in the fierceness of his anger? 'His fury is poured out like fire, and the rocks are thrown down by him,' Nahum i. 6. Now how should these things work poor sinners to flee from wrath to come by fleeing to Christ, 'who alone is able to save them from wrath to come,' 1 Thes. i. 10. Themistocles, understanding that King Admetus was highly displeased with him, he took up the king's young son in his arms, and so treated with the father, holding his darling in his bosom, and by that means pacified his wrath.³ Ah sinners, sinners, the King of kings is highly offended with you, and there is no way to appease his wrath, but by taking up Christ in your arms, and so present your suits to him. But,

3. Thirdly, If there be a hell, then don't *let fly so fiercely against those faithful ministers who seriously and conscientiously do all they can to prevent your dropping into hell*, 2 Cor. v. 20, xii. 15. Don't call them legal preachers who tell you that there is a hell, and that

¹ This drinking of the wine of the wrath of God, without mixture, notes *summam pœne severitatem*.

² 2 Thes. i. 8; Jude 6, 7; Mat. xxv. 46; Isa. xxxiii. 14, &c.

³ Plutarch *in vita*.

there is no torments to hellish torments, if either you consider their extremity or eternity. Be not so hot nor so angry with those ambassadors of Christ who are willing to spend and be spent that they may keep you from running headlong to hell. 'To think of hell,' saith one,¹ 'preserves a man from falling into it;' and, saith the same author, *Utinam ubique de gehenna dissereretur*, I could wish men would discourse much and oft of hell. It was a saying of Gregory Nyssen, who lived about thirteen hundred years ago, 'He that does but hear of hell is, without any further labour or study, taken off from sinful pleasures.' But what minister can say so now? Surely men's hearts are grown worse since, for how do most men run headlong to hell, and take a pleasure to dance hoodwinked into everlasting burnings!² Oh, had but the desperate sinners of this day who swear and curse, drink and drab, and drown themselves in fleshly pleasures, but one sight of this hell, how would it charm their mouths, appal their spirits, and strike fear and astonishment into their hearts!

I cannot think that the high transgressors of this day durst be so highly wicked as they are, did they but either see or foresee what they shall one day certainly feel, except there be sound and serious repentance on their sides, and pardoning grace on God's. Bellarmine was of opinion that one glimpse of hell were enough to make a man, not only turn Christian and sober, but monk too; to live after the strictest rule that may be. And yet, he tells us of a certain advocate of the court of Rome, who being, at the point of death, stirred up by them that were about him to repent and call upon God for mercy, he, with a constant countenance, and without sign of any fear, turned his speech to God, and said, Lord, I have longed much to speak to thee, not for myself, but for my wife and children; for I am hasting to hell, I am now a-going to dwell with devils, neither is there anything that I would have thee to do for me; and this he spoke, saith Bellarmine, who was then present and heard it, *Animo tam tranquillo ac si de itinere ad villam loqueretur*, with as placate, serene and tranquil a mind, as if he had been speaking of going to the next town or village. Ah, who can read or write such a relation without horror and terror!³ But,

4. Fourthly, If there be a hell, then *do not fret, do not envy the prosperity and flourishing estate and condition of wicked and ungodly men*; for God has given it under his hand, that they shall be turned into hell: 'The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God,' Ps. xxxvii. 1, 2, lxxiii. 21; Prov. iii. 31; Ps. ix. 17. It was a wise saying of Marius to those that envy great men their honour, Let them, saith he, envy them their burdens. I have read a story of a Roman, who was by a court-martial condemned to die for breaking his rank to steal a bunch of grapes; and as he was going to execution, some of the soldiers envied him, that he had grapes, and they had none. Saith he, Do you envy me my grapes, I must pay dear for

¹ Chrysostom, hom. xlv. in Mat.

² Look, as he said that nothing but the eloquence of Tully could sufficiently set forth Tully's eloquence, so none can express these everlasting torments but he that is from everlasting to everlasting. Millions of years multiplied by millions, make not up one minute to this eternity; but who considers it, who believes it? &c.

³ Bellar. de arte moriendi, lib. ii. cap. 10.

them ! Ah sirs ! do not envy wicked men's grapes, do not envy their riches, their honours, their greatness, their offices, their dignities ; for they shall one day pay dear for their things. High seats to many are uneasy, and the downfall terrible : ' How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning ! ' Isa. xiv. 12. It is spoken of the Chaldean monarch, who, though high, yet had a sudden change befell him. It is not a matter of so great joy to have been high and honourable, as it is of grief, anguish, and vexation to be afterwards despicable and contemptible : ' Come down, and sit in the dust,' Isa. xlvii. 1. Babylon was the lady of kingdoms ; but, saith God, ' sit in the dust ; take the mill-stones, and grind,' ver. 2 ; ' The Lord of hosts hath purposed to stain (*Heb.*, to pollute) the pride of all glory, and to bring into contempt all the honourable of the earth,' Isa. xxiii. 9 ; ' He shall bring down their pride together,' Isa. xxv. 11 ; ' Woe to the crown of pride : the crown of pride shall be trodden under feet,' Isa. xxviii. 1, 3. God will bring down the crown of pride to the dust, to ashes, yea, to hell ; and, therefore, do not envy the crown of pride. Cræsus was so puffed up with his crown of pride, with his great riches and worldly glory, that he boasted himself to be the happiest man that lived ; but Solon told him that no man was to be accounted happy before death. Cræsus little regarded what Solon had said unto him, until he came, by miserable experience, to find the uncertainty of his riches, and all worldly glory, which before he would not believe. For when he was taken by King Cyrus, and condemned to be burned, and saw the fire preparing for him, then he cried out, O Solon, Solon ! Cyrus asking him the cause of the outcry, he answered, that now he remembered what Solon had told him in his prosperity—*nemo ante obitum felix*—that no man was to be accounted happy before death. Who can sum up those crowns of pride that in Scripture and history God has brought down to the dust, yea, to the dunghill ! Have not some wished, when they have been breathing out their last, that they had never been kings, nor queens, nor lords, nor ladies ? &c. Where is there one of ten thousand who is advanced, and thereby anything bettered ? *Solus imperatorum Vespasianus in melius mutatus*. Few men believe what vexations lie under the pillows of princes. You look upon my crown and my purple robes, saith Artaxerxes ; but did you know how they were lined with thorns, you would not stoop to take them up. Damocles highly extolled Dionysius his condition. Dionysius, to convince him of his mistake, provides a royal feast, invites him to it, commands his servants to attend him. No meat, no mirth, no music is wanting ; but withal caused a sharp sword to be hung overhead by a horse hair, which made Damocles tremble, and to forbear both meat and mirth. Such, even such, saith Dionysius the Sicilian tyrant, is my life, which thou deemest so pleasant and happy. O sirs ! there is a sword of wrath which hangs over every sinner's head, even when he is surrounded with all the gay and gallant things of this world.

Outward prosperity is commonly given in wrath, as you may see by comparing the scriptures in the margin together.¹ Prosperity kills and damns more than adversity. The Germans have this proverb,

¹ Hos. xiii. 11 ; Ps. lxxiii. and lxxviii. 30, 31 ; Prov. i. 32 ; Luke xii. 16–22 ; Eccles. v. 12, 13.

That the pavement of hell is made of the glorious crests of gallants. It had been infinitely better for the great men of this world that they had never been so great, for their horrid abuse of God's mercy and bounty will but increase their misery and damnation at last. That ancient hit it, [Augustine,] who said, Because they have tasted so liberally of God's kindness, and have employed it only against God's glory, their felicity shall be short, but their misery shall be endless; and therefore to see the wicked prosper and flourish in this world is matter rather of pity than envy, it is all the heaven they must have.¹ These are as terrible texts as any in the whole Book of God: Mat. vi. 2, 'Verily I say unto you, they have their reward;' Luke vi. 24, 'Woe to you that are rich, for you have received your consolation;' James v. 1-3, 'Go to, now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you. Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten. Your gold and silver is cankered: and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire.' Gregory, being advanced to places of great preferment, professed that there was no scripture that went so near his heart, and that struck such a trembling into his spirit, as that speech of Abraham to Dives, Luke xvi. 25, 'Son, remember thou in thy lifetime receivest thy good things.' They that have their heaven here, are in danger to miss it hereafter. It is not God's usual way, saith one, [Jerome,] to remove *a deliciis ad delicias*, from delights to delights—to bestow two heavens, one here and another hereafter; and doubtless hence it was that David made it his solemn prayer, 'Deliver me from the wicked, from men of the world, which have their portion in this life, and whose belly thou fillest with thy hid treasure,' Ps. xvii. 14. It is a very hard thing to have earth and heaven too. God did not turn man out of one paradise that he should here provide himself of another. Many men with the prodigal cry out, 'Give me the portion that belongs to me,' Luke xv. 12—give me riches, and give me honour, and give me preferment, &c., and God gives them their desires, but it is with a vengeance; as the Israelites had quails to choke them, and afterwards a king to vex them, and a table to be a snare unto them, Ps. lxxviii. 24-32. When the Israelites had eaten of their dainty dishes, justice sent in a sad reckoning which spoiled all. Ah friends, there is no reason why we should envy the prosperity of wicked men. Suppose, saith one, [Chrysostom,] that a man one night should have a pleasant dream that for the time might much delight him, and for the pleasure of such a dream should be tormented a thousand years together with exquisite torments, would any man desire to have such a dream upon such conditions? All the contentments of this life are not so much to eternity as a dream is to a thousand years. And, oh, how little is that man's condition to be envied, who for these short pleasures of sin must endure an eternity of torments! O sirs! do wicked men purchase their present pleasures at so dear a rate as eternal torments? and do we envy their enjoyment of them so short a time? Would any envy a man going to execution, because he saw him in prison nobly feasted and

¹ The whole Turkish empire is nothing else but a crust cast by our Father to his dogs, and it is all they are likely to have, let them make them merry with it, said Luther. —

nobly attended and bravely courted? or because he saw him go up the ladder with a gold chain about his neck and a scarlet gown upon his back? or because he saw him walk to execution through pleasant fields or delightful gardens? or because there went before him drums beating, colours flying, and trumpets sounding, &c.? Surely no. Oh, no more should we envy the grandeur of the men of the day, for every step they take is but a step to an eternal execution! The sinner is cursed, and all his blessings are cursed; and who in their wits would envy a man under a curse? Oh, how much more worthy of our pity than envy is that man's condition who hath all his happiness confined to the narrow compass of this life, but his misery extended to the uttermost bounds of an everlasting duration! Mal. ii. 2. But,

5. Fifthly, If there be a hell, then, Christians, *spend your days in admiring and in being greatly affected with the transcendent love of Christ, in undergoing hellish punishments in our steads.* Oh pray, pray hard that you 'may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height of that love of Christ which passeth knowledge,' Eph. iii. 18, 19,—of that love of Christ that put him upon these corporeal and spiritual sufferings which were so exceeding great, acute, extreme, universal and continual, and all to save us from wrath to come, 1 Thes. i. 10. Christ's outward and inward miseries, sorrows, and sufferings are not to be paralleled, and therefore Christians have the more cause to lose themselves in the contemplation of his matchless love. Oh, bless Christ! oh, kiss Christ! oh, embrace Christ! oh, welcome Christ! oh, cleave to Christ! oh, follow Christ! oh, walk with Christ! oh, long for Christ! who for your sakes hath undergone insupportable wrath and most hellish torments, as I have evidenced at large before, and therefore a touch here may suffice.¹ Oh, look up to dear Jesus, and say, O blessed Jesus, thou wast accursed that I might be blessed, Gal. iii. 13; thou wast condemned that I might be justified, Isa. liii.; thou didst for a time undergo the very torments of hell, that I might for ever enjoy the pleasures of heaven, Rom. viii. 30, 34; Ps. xvi. 11; and therefore I cannot but dearly love thee, and highly esteem thee, and greatly honour thee, and earnestly long after thee; and this is all I shall say by way of inference.

But, for a close, you will say, *ubi sit?* where is hell? where is this place of torment? where is that very place that is so frequently called hell in the Scripture? That there is a hell, you have sufficiently proved; but, pray, where is it? where is it? Now, to this I answer,

[1.] First, That it becomes all sober, serious Christians to rest satisfied and contented with those scriptural arguments that do undeniably prove that there is a hell, a place appointed where the wicked, the damned, shall be tormented for ever and ever, though they do not know, nor for the present cannot understand, where this hell is. But,

¹ Ps. ciii. 1, 2, and ii. 12; Cant. iii. 4; Rev. xiv. 4, 5; Isa. lxiii. 8; Gen. vi. 9; Cant. viii. 14.

[2.] Secondly, I answer, Curiosity is one of the most dangerous engines that the devil uses to undo souls withal. When Satan observes that men do in good earnest set themselves to the obtaining of knowledge, then he strives to turn them to vain inquiries and curious speculations; that so, if they will be knowing, he may keep them busied about unprofitable curiosities.¹ The way to make us mere fools is to affect to know more than God would have us. Adam's tree of knowledge made him and his posterity fools, Gen. iii. 5, 6. Curiosity was the bait whereby the devil caught our first parents, and undid us all. Curiosity is the spiritual adultery of the soul.² Curiosity is spiritual drunkenness. So that, look, as the drunkard, be the cup never so deep, he is not satisfied unless he see the bottom of it; so the curious searcher into the depths of God, he is unsatisfied till he comes to the bottom of them, and by this means they come to be mere fools, as the apostle saith, Rom. i. 22. Adam had a mind to know as much of God as God himself; and by this means he came to know nothing. Curiosity is that green-sickness of the soul, whereby it longs for novelties, and loathes sound and wholesome truths; it is the epidemical distemper of this age. Ah! how many are there who spend their precious time in nice and curious questions!³ As, what did Christ dispute of among the doctors? Where did Paradise stand? In what part of the world is local hell? What fruit was it that Adam ate, and ruined us all? What became of Moses his body? How many orders and degrees of elect angels are there? &c. Oh that we could learn contentedly to be ignorant where God would not have us knowing, and let us not account it any disparagement to acknowledge some depths in God's counsels, purposes, decrees, and judgments, which our shallow reason cannot fathom, Rom. xi. 33. It is sad when men will be wise above what is written, and love to pry into God's secrets, and scan the mysteries of religion by carnal reason, Rom. xii. 3, and 1 Cor. iv. 6. God often plagues such pride and curiosity by leaving that sort of men to strange and fearful falls. When a curious inquisitor asked Austin what God did before he created the world, Austin told him he was making hell for such busy questionists, for such curious inquirers into God's secrets. Such handsome jerks are the best answers to men of curious minds. But,

[3.] Thirdly, I answer, It concerns us but little to know whether hell be in the air, or in the concave of the earth, or of what longitude, latitude, or profundity it is.⁴ Let hell be where it hath pleased God in his secret counsel to place it, to men unknown, whether in the north or in the south, under the frozen zone, or under the burning zone, or in a pit or a gulf. Our great care should be to avoid it, to escape it, and not to be curiously inquisitive about that place, which

¹ Curious inquirers have always lain under the lash of Christ, as you may see by comparing these scriptures together: Job xxi. 22; Acts i. 6, 7; Luke xiii. 22, 24.

² August. Epist. 77.

³ Basil saith divers questions may be made about a very fly, which no philosopher is ever able to answer; how much rather about heaven, hell, or the work of grace?

⁴ Let us not be inquisitive where hell is, but rather let our care be to escape it, saith Chrysostom.

the Lord in his infinite wisdom hath not thought fit clearly to reveal or make known to the sons of men.

In hell there 's nothing heard but yells and cries;
In hell the fire never slacks, nor worm never dies.
But where is this hell placed? My muse, stop there:
Lord, shew me what it is, but never where!

To worm and fire, to torments there,
No term he gave, they cannot wear.¹

Look, as there are many that please themselves with discourses of the degrees of glory, whilst others make sure their interest in glory; so many please themselves with discourses of the degrees of the torments of hell, whilst others make sure their escaping those torments; and look, as many take pleasure to be discoursing about the place where hell is, so some take pleasure to make sure their escaping of that place; and certainly they are the best and wisest of men who spend most thoughts, and time, and pains how to keep out of it, than to exercise themselves with disputes about it.² But,

[4.] Fourthly, I answer, That it has been the common opinion of the fathers, that hell is in the bowels of the earth; yea, Christ and the blessed Scriptures, which are the highest authority, do strongly seem to favour this opinion, by speaking of a descent unto hell, in opposition unto heaven; and, therefore, we may as well doubt whether heaven be above us, as doubt of hell being beneath us.³ Among other scriptures ponder upon these: Ps. cxl. 10, 'Let them be cast into the deep pits, that they rise not up again. Bring them down into the pit of destruction;' Prov. ix. 18, 'Her guests are in the depths of hell;' Prov. xv. 24, 'The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell beneath.' Sheol is sometimes taken for a pit, sometimes for the grave, and sometimes, and that significantly too, for hell, all downwards. One saith⁴ that Sheol generally signifies all places under the earth; whence some conclude that hell is in the heart of the earth, or under the earth. Without doubt it is below, because it is everywhere opposed to heaven, which is above. It is therefore called *Abyssus*, a deep pit, a vast gulf; such a pit as, by reason of the depth thereof, may be said to have no bottom. The devils entreated Christ that he would not send them to this place, Luke viii. 31, in *Abyssum*, which is, saith one, *Immense profunditatis vorago, quasi absque fundo*: A gulf of immeasurable depth, &c.⁵ The apostle, 2 Pet. ii. 4, speaking of the angels that sinned, saith, 'God cast them down into hell.' So Beza, in his Annotations, telleth us the Greeks called that place which was ordained for the prison and torment of the damned. And reason itself doth teach us that it must needs be opposite and contrary to that place in which the spirits of just men made perfect, Heb. xii. 23, do reside, which, on all hands, is granted to be above; and hell therefore must needs be below, in

¹ A Pentologia, dolor inferni.—Prudentius the poet.

² As in heaven one is more glorious than another, so in hell one shall be more miserable than another.—Augustine.

³ Infernum est locus subterraneus, Tertul. lib. 3. de Anim.

⁴ Mercerus upon Gen. xxxvii. [Comment. on Genesis, 1598, folio.—G.]

⁵ Beza upon Mat.

the centre of the earth, say some, which is from the superficies three thousand five hundred miles, as some judge. Hesiod saith, hell is as far under the earth as heaven is above it. Some have been of opinion that the pit spoken of, into which Korah, Dathan, and Abiram went down alive, when the earth clave asunder and swallowed them up, was the pit of hell, into which both their souls and bodies were immediately conveyed, Num. xvi. 33. As we know little in respect of the height of heaven, so we know as little in respect of the lowness of hell. Some of the upper part of the earth is to us yet *terra incognita*, an unknown land; but all of the lowest parts of hell is to us an unknown land. Many thousands have travelled thither, but none have returned thence, to make reports or write books of their travels. That piece of geography is very imperfect. Heaven and hell are the greatest opposites, or remotest extremes: 'Thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell!' Mat. xi. 23. Heaven and hell are at farthest natural distance, and are therefore the everlasting receptacles of those who are at the farthest moral distance—believers and unbelievers, saints and impenitents. And it is observable, that as the height of heaven, so the depth of hell, is ascribed to wisdom, to shew the unsearchableness of it. 'Oh the depth,' as well as 'Oh the height,' 'of the wisdom of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!' Rom. xi. 33. Certainly God's depths, and Satan's depths, and hell's depths, lie far out of our view, and are hard to be found out, 1 Cor. ii. 10, and Rev. ii. 24. Though I ought religiously to reverence the wonderful wisdom of God, and to wonder at his unsearchable judgments, yet I ought not curiously and profanely to search beyond the compass of that which God hath revealed to us in his word. The Romans had a certain lake, the depth whereof they knew not; this lake they dedicated to victory. Doubtless hell is such a lake, the depth whereof no man knows; it is such a bottomless pit that no mortal can sound. But,

[5.] Fifthly and lastly, I answer, Some of the learned are of opinion, that hell is without this visible world, which will pass away at the last day, 2 Pet. iii. 10-13, and removed at the greatest distance from the *sedes beatorum*, the place where the righteous shall for ever inhabit: Mat. viii. 12, 'But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness.' Mat. xxii. 30, 'Then said the king to his servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness.' Mat. xxv. 30, 'And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness.' Into a darkness beyond a darkness, into a dungeon beyond and beneath the prison.¹ The darkness of hell is compared to the darkness of those prisons, which were oftentimes out of the city,² 2 Pet. ii. 4; Jude 6; Acts xii. 10. By outer darkness, the Holy Ghost would signify to us that the wicked should be in a state most remote from

¹ In tenebras ex tenebris, infeliceiter exclusi, infelicis excludendi.—*Augustine*.

² This prison was without the gate, near mount Calvary, and it was the loathsome and vilest prison of all, for in it the thieves who were carried to Calvary to be executed were kept; and Christ alludeth to this prison in that Mat. viii. 12, and that Mat. xxii. 13, and that Mat. xxv. 30, 'Cast him into utter darkness;' which allusion could not be understood, unless there had been a dark prison without the city, where was utter darkness.

all heavenly happiness and blessedness ; and that they should be expelled out of the blessed presence of God, who is *mentium lumen*. It is usual among the Greeks by a comparative to set forth the superlative degree. By outer darkness we are to understand the greatest darkness that is, as in a place most remote from all light. They shall be cast into outer darkness, that is, they shall be cast into the corporal and palpable darkness of the infernal prison ; immediately after death sinners' souls shall be cast into the infernal prison, and in the day of judgment both their souls and their bodies shall be cast into outer darkness. Darkness is no other thing than a privation of light.

Now light is twofold, viz.—1. Spiritual, as wisdom, grace, truth. Now the privation of this light is internal darkness, and ignorance in the spirit and inward man. 2. There is a sensible and corporal light, whose privation is outer darkness ; and this is the darkness spoken of in the three scriptures last cited. For although there be fire in hell, yet it is a dark and smoky fire, and not clear, except only so as the damned may see one another, for the greater increase of their misery, as some write. Now I shall leave the ingenuous reader to conclude as he pleases concerning the place where hell is, desiring and hoping that he will make it the greatest business of his life to escape hell, and to get to heaven, &c.

6. Sixthly, *If Jesus Christ did feel and suffer the very torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner, then let me infer that certainly the papists are greatly out, they are greatly mistaken, and do greatly err, who boldly and confidently assert that Christ's soul in substance went really and locally into hell.* Bellarmine takes a great deal of pains to make good this assertion,¹ but this great champion of the Romish church may easily be confuted. First, Because that *limbus patrum*, and Christ's fetching the fathers from the skirts of hell, about which he makes so great a noise, is a mere fable, and not bottomed upon any solid grounds of Scripture. Secondly, Because upon Christ's dying, and satisfying for our sins, his soul went that very day into paradise—as Adam sinning was that very day cast out of paradise—and his soul could not be in two places at once. Thirdly, Because this descent of Christ's soul into hell was altogether needless, and to no end. What need was there of it, or to what end did he descend ? Not to suffer in hell, for that was finished on the cross ; not to redeem or rescue the fathers out of hell, for the elect were never there, and redemption from hell was wrought by Christ's death, as the Scriptures do clearly evidence ; not to triumph there over the devils, &c.,² for Christ triumphed over them when he was on the cross.³ Christ, in the day of his solemn inauguration into his heavenly kingdom, triumphed over sin, death, devils, and hell. When Christ was on the cross, he made the devils a public spectacle of scorn and derision ; as Tamerlane did Bajazet the great Turk, whom he shut up in an iron cage made like a grate, in such

¹ Bellar. de Christ. anima. lib. iv. cap. 10–16, tom. 1. Vide Calvin in Institut. lib. ii. cap. 16, sect. 9.

² Luke xxiii. 43 ; Gen. iii. 23, 24 ; John xviii. 30 ; Heb. ix. 12 ; 1 Thes. i. 10 ; Eph. iv. 8 ; Heb. ii. 14, 15 ; Col. ii. 14, 15.

³ It is a plain allusion to the Roman triumphs, where the victor ascended to the Capitol in a chariot of state, the prisoners following on foot with their hands bound behind them, &c.

sort as that he might on every side be seen, and so carried him up and down all Asia, to be scorned and derided by his own people.¹ By these few hints you may see the vanity and folly of the papists, who tell you that Christ's soul and substance went really and locally into hell. I might make other inferences, but let these suffice at this time.

7. Seventhly, *As Jesus Christ did feel and suffer the very torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner, so Jesus Christ was really, certainly made a curse for us.* Jesus Christ did in his soul and body bear that curse of the law, which by reason of transgression was due to us. 'Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us; for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree,' Gal. iii. 13. He saith not Christ was *cursed*, but *a curse*, which is more: it shows that the curse of all did lie upon him. The death on the tree was accursed above all kinds of deaths, as the serpent was accursed above all the beasts of the field, Gen. iii. 14. This scripture refers to Deut. xxi. 33, 'His body shall not remain all night upon the tree; but thou shalt in any wise bury him that day, for he that is hanged is accursed of God.'² The holy and wise God appointed this kind of punishment, as being the most cruel and reproachful, for a type of the punishment which his Son must suffer to deliver us from the curse. Hanging on a tree was accounted the most shameful, the most dishonourable, the most odious and infamous, and accursed, of all kinds of death, both by the Israelites and other nations, because the very manner of the death did intimate that such men as were thus executed were such execrable, base, vile, and accursed wretches, that they did defile the earth with treading on it, and would pollute the earth if they should die upon it, and therefore were hanged up in the air, as persons not fit to converse amongst men, or touch the surface of the ground any more. But what should be the reason why the ceremonial law affixed the curse to this death rather than any other death? I answer, first, because this was reckoned the most shameful and dishonourable of all deaths, and was usually therefore the punishment of those that had by some notorious wickedness provoked God to pour out his wrath upon the whole land, and so were hanged up to appease his wrath; as you may see in the hanging of those princes that were guilty of committing whoredom with the daughters of Moab, Num. xxv. 4; and in the hanging of Saul's seven sons in the days of David, when there was a famine in the land because of Saul's perfidious oppressing of the Gibeonites, 2 Sam. xxi. 6-9; and in Joshua's hanging of the five kings of the Amorites, Josh. xvi. 26. But, secondly and mainly, it was with respect to the death Christ was to die. God would have his Son, the Lord Jesus, to suffer this kind of death, that hence it might be the more evident that in his death he bare the curse due to our sins, according to that of the apostle, Gal. iii. 13. Christ was certainly made that curse which he redeemed us from, otherwise the apostle does not reason either soundly or fairly, when he tells us we

¹ [Knolles,] Turk Hist. 220.

² Not that all that are hanged should be damned, for the contrary appears in that Luke xxiii. 43. Neither is hanging in itself, or by the law of nature, or by civil law, more execrable than any other death.

are redeemed from the curse because Christ was made a curse for us ; he remitteth that curse to us which he received in himself. That father hit the mark who saith,¹ *Christus supplicium nostrum sine reatu suscepit, ut solveret reatum, et finiret supplicium*, Christ hath taken our punishment without guilt, to loose the guilt and end the punishment. We were subject to the curse, because we had transgressed the law ; Christ was not subject, because he had fulfilled it. *Eam ergo execrationem suscepit, cui obnoxius non erat, quum suspensus fuit in ligno, ut execrationem solveret, quæ adversus nos erat*, He therefore took that curse, to the which he was not subject, when he hanged upon the tree, to loose the curse which was against us.² Such a curse or execration was Christ made for us. as was that from which he redeemed us ; and that curse from which he redeemed us was no other than the curse of the law, and that the curse of the law included all the punishment which sinners were to bear or suffer for transgression of the law, of which his hanging on the cross was a sign and symbol ; and this curse was Christ made for us, that is, he did bear and suffer it to redeem us from it. Christ was verily made a curse for us, and did bear both in his body and soul that curse, which by reason of the transgression of the law was due to us ; and therefore I may well conclude this head with that saying of Jerome, *Injuria Domini, nostra gloria*, The Lord's injury is our glory.³ The more we ascribe to Christ's suffering, the less remaineth of ours ; the more painfully that he suffered, the more fully are we redeemed ; the greater his sorrow was, the greater our solace ; his dissolution is our consolation, his cross our comfort ; his annoy our endless joy ; his distress in soul our release, his calamity our comfort ; his misery our mercy, his adversity our felicity, his hell our heaven. Christ is not only accursed, but a curse ; and this expression is used both for more significancy and usefulness, to note out the truth and realness of the thing, and also to shew the order and way he took for bringing us back unto that blessedness which we had lost. The law was our righteousness in our innocent condition, and so it was our blessedness ; but the first Adam, falling away from God by his first transgression, plunged himself into all unrighteousness, and so inwrapped himself in the curse, James i. 24. Now Christ the second Adam, that he may restore the lost man into an estate of blessedness, he becomes that for them which the law is unto them, namely, a curse ; beginning where the law ends, and so going backward to satisfy the demands of the law to the uttermost, he becomes first a curse for them and then their righteousness, and so their blessedness, Rom. x. 24. Now Christ's becoming a curse for us stands in this, that whereas we are all accursed by the sentence of the law because of sin, he now comes in our room, and stands under the stroke of that curse which of right belongs to us ; so that it lies not now any longer on the backs of poor sinners, but on him for them and in their stead ; therefore he is called a surety, Heb. vii. 22. The surety stands in the room of a debtor, malefactor, or him that is any way obnoxious to the law. Such is Adam and all his posterity. We are by the doom of the law evil-doers, transgressors, and upon that score we stand indebted to the justice of God, and lie under the stroke of his wrath. Now the

¹ Bede in Gal. iii.² Cæcumenius in Gal. iii.³ Jerome in Gal. iii.

Lord Jesus, seeing us in this condition, he steps in and stands between us and the blow ; yea, he takes this wrath and curse off from us unto himself. He stands not only or merely after the manner of a surety among men, in the case of debt ; for here the surety indeed enters bond with the principal for the payment of the debt ; but yet he expects that the debtor should not put him to it, but that he should discharge the debt himself : he only stands as a good security. No, Christ Jesus doth not expect that we should pay the debt ourselves, but he takes it wholly to himself. As a surety for a murderer or traitor, or some other notorious malefactor, that hath broken prison and is run away, he lies by it body for body, state for state, and undergoes whatsoever the malefactor is chargeable withal for satisfying the law ; even so, the Lord Jesus Christ stands surety for us runagate malefactors, making himself liable to all that curse which belongs to us, that he might both answer the law fully and bring us back again to God. As the first Adam stood in the room of all mankind fallen ; so Christ the second Adam stands in the room of all mankind which is to be restored ; he sustains the person of all those which do spiritually descend from him, and unto whom he bears the relation of a head, Eph. i. 22, 23. Christ did actually undergo and suffer the wrath of God, and the fearful effects thereof, in the punishments threatened in the law. As he became a debtor, and was so accounted, even so he became payment thereof ; he was made a sacrifice for sin, and bare to the full all that ever divine justice did or could require, even the uttermost extent of the curse of the law of God. He must thus undergo the curse, because he had taken upon him our sin. The justice of the most high God, revealed in the law, looks upon the Lord Jesus as a sinner, because he hath undertaken for us, and seizeth upon him accordingly, pouring down on his head the whole curse, and all those dreadful punishments which are threatened in it against sin ; for the curse followeth sin as the shadow the body, whether it be sin inherent or sin imputed ; even as the blessing follows righteousness, whether it be righteousness inherent or righteousness imputed. But,

8. Eighthly, He that did feel and suffer the very torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner, was *God man*. Christ participates of both natures, being Θεάνθρωπος, God and man, God-man. Such a mediator sinners needed. No mediator but such a one who hath interest in both parties, could serve their turns or save their souls, and such a one is the Lord Jesus ; he hath an interest in both parties, and he has an interest in both natures, the Godhead and the manhood. The blessed Scriptures are so express and clear in these points, that they must shut their eyes with a witness against the light, that cannot see Christ to be God-man, to be God and man. I shall first speak something of Christ, as he is God. Now here are fathomless depths and bottomless bottoms, if I may so speak ; here are stupendous and amazing mysteries, astonishing and confounding excellencies, such as the holy angels themselves desire to pry into.¹ God is φῶς οἰκῶν ἀπρόσιτον, dwelling in inaccessible light : 1 Tim. vi. 16. Here are such beauties and perfections that had I, as the poet speaks, a hundred

¹ 1 Pet. i. 12, παρακύψαι. The word signifies to look wishly and intently, as the cherubims of old looked into the mercy-seat, Exod. xxv. 18, 19. It signifies prying into

tongues, a hundred mouths, and a voice of steel, yet I could not sufficiently describe them. Nevertheless give me leave to say something concerning our Lord Jesus Christ, who is one eternal God with the Father, and with the Holy Ghost. I might produce a cloud of witnesses in the case, but it is enough that we have the authority of the sacred Scriptures, both in the Old and New Testament, confirming of it; and therefore I shall lay down some proofs or demonstrations of the eternal godhead of Christ, which I shall draw out of the blessed Scripture. This is a point of high concernment, that Christ is God; so high as whosoever buildeth not upon this buildeth upon the sands. This is the rock of our salvation, 'The Word was God,' John i. 1. Concerning this important point, consider—

1. First, *That the godhead of Christ is clearly asserted, and manifested both in the Old and New Testament.* Take a taste of some of those many scriptures which may be cited: Isa. xliii. 10–12, 'That ye may know and believe, and understand that I am he, I, even I am Jehovah, and besides me there is no Saviour:' and Isa. xli. 21–25, 'There is no God else besides me: a just God and Saviour, there is none besides me. Look unto me and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth, for I am God, and there is none else. To me every knee shall bow. . . . In Jehovah have I righteousness. . . . In Jehovah shall the seed of Israel be justified.'¹ Compare this with Rom. xiv. 10, 11. And the Socinians may as safely conclude, that there is no other God but Jesus Christ, as they may conclude that there is no God but God the Father, from the 17th of John. But they and we ought to conclude from these scriptures, that Jesus Christ is not a different God from the Father, but is one and the same God with him. So he is called 'The mighty God, the everlasting Father,' Isa. ix. 6. Take a few clear places out of the New Testament, as that in Rom. ix. 5, 'Of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for evermore.' Christ is here himself called God blessed for ever. So Titus ii. 13, 'Looking for that hope, and the glorious appearance of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ.' Who is it that shall appear at the last day in the clouds, but Christ? who is called the great God and our Saviour? 'God blessed for ever,' saith Paul to the Romans; 'The great God,' saith Paul to Titus: 1 John v. 20, 'And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true; and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life:' Phil. ii. 6, 'He was in the form of God, and thought it no robbery to be equal with God:' and Col. ii. 9, 'In him dwelleth the fulness of the Godhead bodily:' John xx. 28, 'My Lord, and my God:' 1 Tim. iii. 16, 'God manifested in the flesh:' 'To which of the saints or angels did God say at any time, Thou art my Son?' Heb. i. 1. 'The heir of all things, the illustrious brightness of my glory, and lively character of my person.' 'Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, and all the angels of God shall worship thee.' Certainly he a thing overveiled and hidden from sight, to look, as we say, wisely, ['wistfully'—G.] at it, as if we would look even through it.

¹ Compare these scriptures of the Old Testament with these in the New. Heb. i. 2, 3; 1 John i. 7; Acts iv. 12; Eph. iv. 8; Rom. ix. 30; [and also] Jer. xxxviii. 23; Ps. vi., lxviii. 18–20.

who is God's own proper, natural, consubstantial, co-essential, only-begotten Son; he is God; wherever this sonship is, there is the deity or the divine essence. Now Christ is thus God's Son, therefore he is God. What the Father is as to his nature, that the Son must also be; now the first person, the Father of Christ, is God; whereupon he too who is the Son must be God also. A son always participates of his father's essence, there is betwixt them evermore an identity and oneness of nature. If therefore Christ be God's Son, as is most evident throughout the Scripture he is, then he must needs have that very nature and essence which God the Father hath, insomuch that if the second person be not really a God, the first person is but equivoeally a Father. These scriptures out of the Old and New Testament are so evident and pregnant to prove the godhead of Christ, that they need no illustration; yea, they speak so fully for the divinity of Christ, that all the Arians and Socinians in the world do but in vain go about to elude them. But,

2. Secondly, *Let us ponder seriously upon these scriptures*: John iii. 13, 'And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man, which is in heaven;' ver. 31, 'He that cometh from above is above all: he that cometh from heaven is above all;' John viii. 23, 'Ye are from beneath, I am from above;' John xvi. 28, 'I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world; and again I leave the world, and go to the Father.' Now from these blessed scriptures we may thus argue: he who was in heaven before he was on the earth, and who was also in heaven whilst he was on the earth, is certainly the eternal God; but all this doth Jesus Christ strongly assert concerning himself, as is evident in the scriptures last cited; therefore he is the eternal God, blessed for ever. But,

3. Thirdly, Christ's eternal deity, co-equality, and consubstantiality with the Father, may be demonstrated from *his divine names and titles*. As,

(1.) First, *Jehovah* is one of the incommunicable names of God, which signifies his eternal essence.

The Jews observe that in God's name *Jehovah*, the Trinity is implied. *Je* signifies the present tense, *ho* the preterperfect tense, *vah* the future. The Jews also observe that in his name *Jehovah* all the Hebrew letters are *literæ quiescentes*, that denote rest, implying that in God and from God is all our rest. Every gracious soul is like Noah's dove, he can find no rest nor satisfaction but in God. God alone is the godly man's ark of rest and safety. *Jehovah* is the incommunicable name of God, and is never attributed to any but God: Ps. lxxxiii. 19, 'Thou whose name alone is *Jehovah*.' *Jehovah* is a name so full of divine mysteries, that the Jews hold it unlawful to pronounce it.¹ *Jehovah* signifies three things:—

- [1.] That God is an eternal, independent being of himself.
- [2.] That he gives being to all creatures, Acts xvii. 28.
- [3.] That he doth, and will give, being to his promises. God tells

¹ Exod. xv. 3; Gen. ii. 4. The Jews called it *nomen Dei ineffabile*. But this name *Jehovah* is not unspeakable in regard of the name, but in regard of the essence of God, set forth by it, as Zanchy [Zanchius] noteth. This name was always thrice repeated when the priest blessed the people, Num. vi. 24–26.

Moses, *Exod. vi. 3*, that he 'appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob by the name of *El Shaddai*, God Almighty, but by my name Jehovah was I not known to them.' The name Jehovah was known to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, but not *mysterium nominis*, the mystery of the name.¹ This was revealed to Moses from God, and from Moses to the people. It is meant of the performances of his great promises made to Abraham. God did promise to give the land of Canaan to Abraham's seed for an inheritance, which promise was not performed to him, but to his seed after him; so that this is the meaning, God appeared to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, *El Shaddai*, God Almighty, in protecting, delivering, and rewarding of them, but by his name Jehovah he was not known to them. God did not perform his promise made to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, but unto their seed and posterity after them. This name Jehovah is the proper and peculiar name of the one, only true God, a name as far significant of his nature and being as possibly we are enabled to understand; so that this is taken for granted on all hands, that he whose name is Jehovah is the only true God. Whenever that name is used properly, without a trope or figure, it is used of God only.

Now this glorious name Jehovah, that is so full of mysteries, is frequently ascribed to Christ: *Isa. vi. 1*, he is called Jehovah, for there Isaiah is said to see 'Jehovah sitting upon a throne,' &c. And, *John xii. 41*, this is expressly by the holy evangelist applied to Christ, of whom he saith, that 'Isaiah saw his glory, and spake of him.' *Exod. xvii. 1*, the people are said to 'tempt Jehovah;' and the apostle saith, *1 Cor. x. 9*, 'Let us not tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents.' It is said of Jehovah, 'Of old hast thou laid the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of thy hands; they shall perish, but thou shalt endure,' &c., *Ps. cii. 25, 26*; and the apostle clearly testifies, *Heb. i. 10*, that these words are spoken of Christ. So Jehovah rained fire and brimstone from Jehovah out of heaven, *Gen. xix. 24*; that is, Jehovah, the Son of God, that stayed with Abraham, *Gen. xviii.*, rained fire and brimstone from Jehovah the Father; and Christ is called *Jehovah-Tsidkenu*, the Lord our righteousness; and in that *Zech. xiii. 7*, Christ is called the Father's fellow. The Lord Christ is that Jehovah, to whom every knee must bow, as appears by comparing *Isa. xlv. 21-25* with *Rom. xiv. 9-12* and *Phil. ii. 6, 9-11*. I might further insist upon this argument, and shew that the title of Lord, so often given to Christ in the New Testament, doth answer to the title of Jehovah in the Old Testament. And, as some learned men conceive, the apostles did purposely use the title of Lord, that they might not offend the Jews with frequent pronouncing of the word Jehovah: 'Thou shalt fear Jehovah thy God.' *Deut. vi. 13* and *x. 20* is rendered by the apostle, 'Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God;' and so *Deut. vi. 5*, 'Thou shalt love Jehovah thy God,' is rendered, *Mat. xxii. 37*, 'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God.' Thus you see that in several precious scriptures

¹ *Gen. xx. 14*, 'Abraham called the name of the place Jehovah-Jireh, the Lord will see, or provide.' Besides, the fathers of old are said not to have known God by his name Jehovah, in comparison of that which their posterity knew afterwards; for to them God made himself more clearly and plenarily known.

Jesus Christ is called Jehovah; and therefore we may very safely and confidently conclude that Jesus Christ is very God, God blessed for ever. But,

(2.) The second name or title which denotes the essence of God is *Ehieh*, 'I am that I am,' or, I will be what I will be, Exod. iii. 14.¹ It hath the same root with Jehovah, and signifies that God is an eternal, unchangeable being. Some make this name to be God's extraordinary name. Damascene saith this name containeth all things in it, like a vast and infinite ocean without bounds. This glorious name of God, I AM THAT I AM, implies these six things. [1.] God's *incomprehensibleness*: as we use to say of anything we would not have others pry into, it is what it is, so God saith here to Moses, I AM WHAT I AM. [2.] It implies God's *immensity*, that his being is without any limits. Angels and men have their beings, but then they are bounded and limited within such a compass; but God is an immense being that cannot be included within any bounds. [3.] It implies that God is *of himself*, and hath not a being dependent upon any other. 'I am,' that is, by and from and of myself. [4.] It implies God's *eternal and unchangeable* being in himself. It implies God's everlastingness. 'I am before anything was, and shall for ever be.' There never was nor shall be time wherein God could not say of himself, 'I am.' [5.] It implies that there is *no succession of time with God*. And, [6.] It implies that he is a God that *gives being to all things*.² In short, the reason why God nameth himself, 'I AM THAT I AM, or will be that I will be, is because he is the Being of beings, subsisting by himself; as if he should say, I am my being, I am my essence; my existence differeth not from my essence, because I am that I am, and as I am, so will I be to all eternity,' 'the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever.' 'There is no shadow of change, no variability at all in me.'

Now this glorious name is given to Jesus Christ: Rev. i. 8, 'I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.'³ This kind of speaking is taken from the Greek alphabet, in which language John wrote this book. *A*, called *Alpha* by them, being their first letter, and *Ω*, which they call *Omega*, the last. The sense is, I was before all creatures, and shall abide for ever, though all creatures should perish; or I am he from whom all creatures had their beginning, and to whom they are referred, as their uttermost end. Christ, in calling of himself Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, and that absolutely, doth therein assume unto himself absolute perfection, power, dominion, eternity, and divinity, which is, and which was, and which is to come. Christ assumeth all those epithets here to himself by which John, ver. 4, described God; and what wonder is it if Christ, who is God, doth take to himself whatever is due to God? The Almighty: this is another epithet proper to God, which Christ also

¹ The Hebrew *Ehieh*, after *Ehieh*, properly signifies, 'I will be that I will be.' The Septuagint renders it 'Εγώ εἰμι ὁ ὢν, I am he that is; and in that Rev. xvi. 5, God is called, He that is, and that was, and that will be.

² Every creature is temporary and mutable. No creature can say, *Ero qui ero*, I will be that I will be.

³ In this verse you have a clear and pregnant proof of Christ's deity.

taketh to himself, shewing that he is the true, eternal, and omnipotent God, in all things equal and co-essential with the Father and the Holy Ghost. This being the seventh argument which John makes use of to prove the deity of Christ, is three times repeated. He is the first and the last, which is, was, and is to come, and the Almighty, and therefore he is, without a peradventure, God eternal; for so Jehovah saith of himself, 'I the Lord, the first and the last, I am he; I am the first, and I am the last, and besides me there is no God; I am God Almighty.'¹ But Christ doth challenge, as due to himself, all these divine attributes; therefore he is Jehovah, that one, eternal, and omnipotent God with the Father and the Holy Ghost. Oh, the stateliness and majesty of our Lord Jesus Christ! What an excellent and stately person is he, there being not a property attributed to God but is agreeable to Christ! Every word in this Rev. i. 8, is a proper attribute of God. He is infinite in power, sovereign in dominion, and not bounded as creatures are. And that this is clearly spoken of Christ is most evident, not only from the scope, John being to set out Christ, from whom he had this revelation, but also from the 11th and 17th verses following, where he gives him the same titles over again, or rather, if you please, Christ, speaking of himself, taketh and repeateth the same titles.² Heb. xiii. 8, 'Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, and to-day, and for ever.' 'Yesterday,' that is, the time past, before his coming in the flesh; 'to-day,' while in the flesh; 'and for ever,' that is, after. The same afore time, in time, and after time. 'Jesus Christ the same,' that is, unchangeable in his essence, promises, and doctrine. Jesus Christ was always the same, and is still the same, and will abide for ever the same, as being one selfsame God, and one selfsame Mediator, as well in the Old as in the New Testament. John viii. 58, 'Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, before Abraham was, I am.' According to my divine nature, which is from everlasting, before Abraham was, I am. I who, according to my humanity, am not above fifty years old, according to my divine nature am eternal, and so before Abraham and all the creatures, Micah v. 1, 2. I have a being from all eternity, and so before Abraham was born; and therefore, as young as you take me to be in respect of my age here, I may well have seen and known Abraham, though he died above two thousand years since. But,

(3.) The third name or title which denotes the essence of God is *Elohim*, which signifies the persons in the essence. It is a name of the plural number, expressing the trinity of persons in the unity of essence; and, therefore, it is observed by the learned that the Holy Ghost beginneth the story of the creation with this plural name of God, joined with a verb of the singular number, as *Elohim Bara, Dii creavit*, the mighty Gods, or all the three persons in the godhead, created, Gen. i. 1, 2. So Gen. iii. 22, 'And Jehovah Elohim said, Behold, the man is become as one of us.' It is a holy irrision of man's vain affectation of the deity. God upbraids our first parents for their vain affectation of being like unto him in that ironical expression, 'Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil;'

¹ Isa. xli. 4, xlv. 6, and Gen. xvii. 1.

² See Rev. xxi. 6, and xxii. 13.

meaning, that by his sin he was become most unlike him. This name Elohim, by which God expresseth his nature, denotes the power and strength of God ; to shew us that God is strong and powerful, and that he can do great things for his people, and bring great desolations and destructions upon his and his people's enemies. O sirs, God is too strong for his strongest enemies, and too powerful for all the powers of hell ! Though Jacob, a worm in his own eyes, and in his enemies' eyes, yet Jacob need never fear ; for Elohim, the strong and powerful God, will stand by him, and help him, Isa. xli. 10, 13, 14.

Now this name is also attributed unto Christ : Ps. xlv. 6, 'Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever : the sceptre of thy kingdom is a right sceptre.' 'Thy throne, O God,' Hebrew אֱלֹהִים gods—'Thy throne, O Gods,' Elohim. It signifies the trinity of persons in the unity of essence, as I have before noted. The prophet directs his speech, not to Solomon but to Christ, as is most evident by the clear and unquestionable testimony of the Holy Ghost : Heb. i. 8, 'But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever : a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.' Christ is called God, not by an excellency only as the angels are, nor by office and title only as magistrates are called gods, nor catachrestically and ironically as the heathen gods are called, nor a diminutive God, inferior to the Father, as Arius held, but God by nature every way, co-essential, co-eternal, and co-equal with the Father and the Holy Ghost.¹ Hold fast all truth, but, above all, hold fast this glorious truth, that Jesus Christ is God blessed for ever.

(4.) The fourth name or title which denotes the essence of God is *El Gibbor*, the strong and mighty God. God is not only strong in his own essence, but he is also strong in the defence of his people, and it is he that giveth all strength and power to all other creatures, 2 Chron. xvi. 9. There are no men, no powers, that are a match for the strong God.

Now this title is also attributed to Christ : Isa. ix. 6, 'El Gibbor, the strong God, the mighty God.' The word אֱל, signifying God, doth also signify strong. He is so strong that he is almighty, he is one to whom nothing is impossible. Christ's name is God, for he is the same essence with God the Father. This title, 'the mighty God,' fitteth well to Christ, who hath all the names of the deity given to him in Scripture ; and who, by the strength and power of his godhead, did satisfy the justice of God, and pacify the wrath of God, and make peace, and purchase pardon and eternal life for all his elect.

(5.) The fifth name or title which denotes the essence of God is *El Shaddai*, God omnipotent or all-sufficient, Gen. xvii. 1. He wanteth nothing, but is infinitely blessed with the infinite perfection of his glorious being. By this name God makes himself known to be self-sufficient, all-sufficient, absolutely perfect. Certainly that man can want nothing who hath an all-sufficient God for his God. He that loseth his all for God, shall find all in an all-sufficient God, Mat. xix. 29. Esau had much, but Jacob had all, because he had the God of all, Gen. xxxiii. 9-11. *Habet omnia, qui habet habentem omnia.* What are riches, honours, pleasures, profits, lands, friends, yea, millions

¹ Ps. viii. 5, compared with Heb. ii. 6-8, and Ps. lxxxii. 16.

of worlds, to one Shaddai, God Almighty, God All-sufficient? [Augustine.]¹ This glorious name Shaddai, was a noble bottom for Abraham to act his faith upon, though in things above nature or against it, &c. He that is El Shaddai is perfectly able to defend his servants from all evil, and to bless them with all spiritual and temporal blessings, and to perform all his promises which concern both this life and that which is to come.

Now this name, this title Shaddai, is attributed to Christ, as you may clearly see by comparing Gen. xxxv. 6, 9-11, and xxxii. 24-30, with Hosea xii. 3-5.² That angel that appeared to Jacob was Christ, the angel of the covenant. Mark, you shall never find either God the Father or the Holy Ghost called an angel in Scripture; nor was this a created angel, for then Jacob would never have made supplication to him; but he was an uncreated angel, even the Lord of hosts, the Almighty God, who spake with Jacob in Bethel. He that in this divine story is said to be a man, was the Son of God in human shape, as is most evident by the whole narration. The angel in the text is the same angel that conducted the Israelites in the wilderness, and fought their battles for them, Exod. iii. 2; Acts vii. 30; 1 Cor. x. 4, 5, 9, even Jesus Christ, who is styled once and again the Almighty, Rev. i. 8, and iv. 8. In this last scripture is acknowledged Christ's holiness, power, and godhead. Ah Christians! when will you once learn to set one Almighty Christ against all the mighty ones of the world, that you may bear up bravely and stoutly against their rage and wrath, and go on cheerfully and resolutely in the way of your duty.

(6.) The sixth name or title is *Adonai*, my Lord. Though this name Adonai be given sometimes analogically to creatures, yet properly it belongs to God above.³ This name is often used in the Old Testament; and, in Mat. i. 6, it is used in the plural number to note the mystery of the holy Trinity, 'If I be *Adonim*, Lords, where is my fear?' Some derive the word Adonai from a word in the Hebrew [אֲדֹנָי] that signifies *judicare*, to judge, because God is the Judge of the world; others derive it from a word which signifies *basis*, a foundation, intimating that God is the upholder of all things, as the foundation of a house is the support of the whole building.

Now this name is given to Christ: Dan. ix. 17, 'Cause thy face to shine upon thy sanctuary that is desolate, for Adonai, the Lord Christ, sake.' Daniel pleads here no merits of their own, but the merits and mediation of the Messiah, whom God hath made both Lord and Christ. So Ps. cx. 1, 'The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool.'⁴ Christ applies these words to himself, as you may see in that Mat. xxii. 24, 'Jehovah said,' that is, God the Father said, לֹא אֲדֹנָי *La-adoni*, 'unto my Lord,' that is, to Christ; 'sit thou at my right hand,' sit thou with me in my throne. It notes the advancement of Christ, as he was both God and man in

¹ This name Shaddai belongeth only to the godhead, and to no creature; no, not to the humanity of Christ.

² See my treatise on closet-prayer, opening that Gen. xxxii., and that Hosea xii., pp. 48-51, where you have four arguments to prove that Jesus Christ is the angel, the man, that is there spoken of, &c. [Vol. ii., pp. 139. seq. 'The Privy Key of Heaven.'—G.]

³ Query, 'alone'?—G.

⁴ Acts ii. ; Luke i. 43, and ii. 11, 12; Heb. i. 13.

one person, to the supremest place of power and authority, of honour and heavenly glory, Mat. xxviii. 18 ; John iii. 35. God's right hand notes a place of equal power and authority with God, even that he should be advanced far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, Eph. i. 21 ; Heb. i. 3 ; Luke xxii. 69. Christ's reign over the whole world is sometimes called 'the right hand of the majesty,' and sometimes the 'right hand of the power of God.' 'Until I make thine enemies thy footstool.' This implies, [1.] That Jesus Christ hath ever had, and will have enemies, even to the end of the world. [2.] Victory, a perfect conquest over them. Conquerors used to make their enemies their footstool. Those proud enemies of Christ, who now set up their crests, face the heavens, and strut it out against him, even those shall be brought under his feet. [3.] It implies ignominy, the lowest subjection. Sapore, King of Persia, overcoming the Emperor Valerian in battle, used his back for a stirrup when he got upon his horse ; and so Tamerlane served Bajazet. [4.] The footstool is a piece of state, and both raiseth and caseth him that sits on the throne ; so Christ will both raise himself and case himself by that vengeance that he will take on his enemies, &c.

Now from these divine names and titles which are given to Jesus Christ, we may thus argue, He to whom the incommunicable titles of the most high God are attributed, he is the most high God ; but the incommunicable titles of the most high God are attributed unto Christ, *ergo*, he is the most high God. But,

4. Fourthly, Christ's eternal deity, co-equality, and consubstantiality with the Father may be demonstrated from his *divine properties and attributes*. I shall shew you for the opening of this that the glorious attributes of God are ascribed to the Lord Jesus. I shall begin,—

(1.) First, with *the eternity of God*. God is an eternal God. 'From everlasting to everlasting thou art God,' Ps. xc. 2 ; 'The eternal God is thy refuge,' Deut. xxxiii. 27 ; 'He inhabits eternity,' Isa. lvii. 15. He is called 'the ancient of days,' Dan. vii. 9 ; and he is said to be 'everlasting,' and to be 'king of old,' Ps. lxxiv. 12. This sheweth he had no beginning. In respect of his eternity, after time, he is called 'the everlasting God,' Rom. xvi. 26 ; 'An everlasting king,' 1 Tim. i. 17. That there is no succession or priority or poster[ori]ty in God, but that he is from everlasting to everlasting the same, we may see Ps. cii. 26, 27, 'The heavens shall perish, but thou shalt endure ; yea, all of them shall wax old like a garment, and as a vesture shalt thou change them, and they shall be changed ; but thou art the same, and thy years shall have no end.' There is no succession or variation in God, but he is eternally the same. Eternity is an interminable being and duration before any time, and beyond all time ; it is a fixed duration, without beginning or ending.¹ The eternity of God is beyond all possible conception of measure or time. God ever was, ever is, and ever shall be. Though the manifestations of himself unto the crea-

¹ Eternity is taken three ways. [1.] *Proprie, properly*, so it noteth to be without beginning and end, so God only is eternal ; [2.] *Improprie, improperly*, so it noteth to have a beginning but no ending ; so angels, so the souls of men are eternal ; [3.] *Abusive*, so some things are said to be eternal which have had a beginning, and shall also have an end. They are called eternal in respect of their long continuance and duration ; so circumcision and other Mosaical ceremonies were called eternal or everlasting.

tures are in time, yet his essence or being never did nor shall be bound up by time. Look backward or forward, God from eternity to eternity, is a most self-sufficient, infinite, perfect, blessed being, the first cause of our being, and without any cause of his own being; an eternal infinite fulness, and possession to himself and of himself. What God is, he was from eternity, and what God is, he will be so to eternity. Oh, this glorious attribute drops mirth¹ and mercy, oil and honey!

Now this attribute of eternity is ascribed to Jesus Christ: John i. 1, 'In the beginning was the Word;' 'was' notes some former duration, and therefore we conclude that he was before the beginning, before any creation or creatures, for it is said he was God in the beginning, and his divine nature whereby he works is eternal, Heb. ix. 14. He is 'the first and last,' Rev. i. 17. Hence it is that he is called 'the firstborn of every creature,' because he who created all, and upholds all, hath power to command and dispose of all, as the firstborn had power to command the family or kingdom, Col. i. 15-17; compare Isa. lxvi. 6, with Rev. xxii. 13. John xvii. 5, 'Father glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory I had with thee before the world was.' Such glory had the Lord Christ with his Father, viz., in the heavens, and that before the world was. This he had not only in regard of destination, being predestinated to it by God his Father, as Grotius would evade it, but in regard of actual possession. 'The Lord possessed me in the beginning of his way,' saith Christ the Son of God, Prov. viii. 22. And as his Father possessed him, so he was possessed of the selfsame glory with his Father before the world was, from eternity. 'His goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting,' from the days of eternity, saith the prophet Micah, speaking of the Messiah, Micah v. 2. See the eternity of Christ further confirmed by the scriptures in the margin.² But,

(2.) Secondly, As the attribute of eternity is ascribed to Christ, so the attribute of *omniscience* is ascribed to Christ; and this speaks out the godhead of Christ. He knows all things: John xxi. 17, 'Lord, thou knowest all things;' τὰ παρόντα καὶ τὰ μέλλοντα, all things present and future; what I now am, and what I shall be, saith one, [Chrysostom] on the words: John ii. 25, 'He needed not that any should testify of man, for he knew what was in man.' Shall artificers know the nature and properties of their works, and shall not Christ know the hearts of men, which are the work of his own hands? Rev. ii. 23, 'And all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts.' Now of all a man's inwards, the heart and the reins are the most inward. Christ is nearer to us than we are to ourselves. The Greek word ἐρευνᾶν, that is here rendered *searcheth*, signifies to search with the greatest seriousness, exactness, and diligence that can be; the word is metaphorically taken from such as use to search in mines for silver and gold. He is also frequently said to know the thoughts of men, and that before they bewrayed themselves

¹ Spelled 'myrth': query, 'myrrh'?—G.

² John viii. 58, and xvii. 24; Rev. i. 8, 17; Heb. i. 10-12, and vii. 3; Isa. ix. 6, &c. Christ is without beginning of days or end of time, and without all bounds of precession or succession.

by any outward expressions.¹ Now this is confessedly God's peculiar, 'God which knoweth the hearts.' He is the wisdom of the Father, 1 Cor. i. 24. He knows the Father, and doth, according to his will, reveal the secrets of his Father's bosom. The bosom is the seat of love and secrecy, John i. 18. Men admit those into their bosoms, with whom they impart all their secrets; the breast is the place of counsels; that is, Christ revealeth the secret and mysterious counsels, and the tender and compassionate affections of the Father to the world. Being in the bosom implieth communication of secrets: the bosom is a place for them. It is a speech of Tully to a friend that had betrusted him with a secret, *crede mihi*, &c., Believe me, saith he, what thou hast committed to me, it is in my bosom still, I am not ungirt to let it slip out. But Scripture addeth this hint too, where it speaketh of the bosom as the place of secrets: Prov. xvii. 23, 'A wicked man taketh a gift out of the bosom, to pervert the ways of judgment,' speaking of a bribe: Prov. xxi. 14, 'A gift in secret pacifieth anger, and a reward in the bosom expiatieth wrath.' Here is 'secret' and 'bosom' all one, as gift and reward are one. So Christ lieth in the Father's bosom; this intimateth his being conscious to all the Father's secrets. But,

(3.) Thirdly, As the attribute of God's omniscience is ascribed to Christ, so the attribute of God's *omnipresence* is ascribed to Christ; Mat. xviii. 20, 'Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them;' and chap. xxviii. 29, 'I am with you alway, even to the end of the world.' He is not contained in any place, who was before there was any place, Prov. viii. 22, and John i. 1, 3, and did create all places by his own power. Whilst Christ was on earth in respect of his bodily presence, he was in the bosom of his Father, which must be understood of his divine nature and person. He did come down from heaven, and yet remained in heaven.² Christ is universally present, he is present at all times and all places, and among all persons; he is repletively everywhere, inclusively nowhere. Diana's temple was burnt down when she was busy at Alexander's birth, and could not be at two places together; but Christ is present both in paradise and in the wilderness at the same time, *ubi non est per gratiam, adest per vindictam*, where he is not by his gracious influence, there he is by his vindictive power.³ Empedocles could say that God is a circle, whose centre is everywhere, whose circumference is nowhere. The poor blind heathens could say that God is the soul of the world; and thus, as the soul is *tota in toto*, and *tota in qualibet parte*, so is he, that his eye is in every corner, &c. To which purpose they so portrayed their goddess Minerva, that which way soever one cast his eye, she always beheld him. But,

(4.) Fourthly, As the attribute of God's omnipresence is ascribed to Christ, so the attribute of God's *omnipotency* is ascribed to Christ, and this speaks out the Godhead of Christ, 'All power is given unto

¹ Mat. ix. 24; and xii. 25; Luke v. 22, vi. 18, xi. 17, and xxiv. 38, &c.

² John i. 18, iii. 13; Ps. cxxxix. 7-11.

³ Greg. in Ezek. Hom. 8, Aug. medit. c. 29, where two are sitting together, and conversing about the law, there is Shechinah, the divine majesty, among them. Grotius on Mat. xviii. 20.

me, in heaven and in earth,' Mat. xxviii. 18; John v. 19. 'What things soever the Father doth, these also doth the Son,' Phil. iii. 21. He is called by a metonymy 'the power of God,' 1 Cor. i. 24. 'He is the Almighty,' Rev. i. 8. 'He made all things,' John i. 3. 'He upholds all things,' Heb. i. 3. 'He shall change our vile body,' saith the apostle, 'that it may be like unto his glorious body, according to the mighty working whereby he is able to subdue all things to himself,' Phil. iii. 21. Now from what has been said we may thus argue, He to whom the incommunicable properties of the most high God are attributed, he is the most high God; but the incommunicable properties of the most high God are attributed to Christ, *ergo*, Christ is the most high God.¹ But,

5. Fifthly, Christ's eternal deity, co-equality, and consubstantiality with the Father, may be demonstrated from his *divine works*. The same works which are peculiar to God are ascribed to Christ. Such proper and peculiar, such divine and supernatural works as none but God can perform, Christ did perform. As, [1.] *Election*. The elect are called his elect, Mat. xxiv. 31; John xiii. 18. 'I know whom I have chosen,' John xv. 16. 'I have chosen you, and ordained you, that you should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain;' ver. 19, 'But I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.' [2.] *Redemption*. O sirs, none but the great God could save us from wrath to come, none but God blessed for ever could deliver us from the curse of the law, the dominion of sin, the damnatory power of sin, the rule of Satan, and the flames of hell.² Ah, friends, these enemies were too potent, strong, and mighty for any mere creature, yea, for all mere creatures, to conquer and overcome. None but the most high God could everlastingly secure us against such high enemies. [3.] *Remission of sins*. Mat. ix. 6, 'The Son of man hath power to forgive sins.' Christ here positively proves that he had power on earth to forgive sins, because miraculously, by a word of his mouth, he causes the palsy man to walk, so that he arose and departed to his house immediately. Christ he forgives sin authoritatively. Preachers forgive only declaratively, John xx. 23, as Nathan to David, 'The Lord hath put away thine iniquity,' 2 Sam. xii. 7. I have read of a man that could remove mountains, but none but the man Christ Jesus could ever remit sin. All the persons in the Trinity forgive sins, yet not in the same manner. The Father bestows forgiveness, the Son merits forgiveness, and the Holy Ghost seals up forgiveness, and applies forgiveness. [4.] The bestowing of *eternal life*. John x. 28, 'My sheep hear my voice, and I give unto them eternal life.' Christ is the prince and principle of life, and therefore all out of him are dead whilst they live, Col. iii. 3, 4. Eternal life is too great a gift for any to give but a God. [5.] *Creation*. John i. 3, 'All things are made by him;' and ver. 10, 'The world was made by him.' Col. i. 16, 'By him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in the earth, visible and invisible.' Now the apostle telleth you 'he that built all things is God;' Christ built all things, *ergo*, Christ is God.³

¹ See Col. i. 16, 17. Ps. ciii. 26, compared with Heb. i. 8, 10, John i. 10.

² 1 Thes. i. 10; Gal. iii. 13; Rom. vi. 14, and viii. 1; Luke i. 68-80.

³ Justin Martyr quoteth two Greek verses out of Pythagoras to prove there is but one

The argument lieth fair and undeniable. The all things that were created by Christ, Paul reduceth to two heads, visible and invisible; but Zanchius addeth a third branch to this distinction, and maketh it more plain by saying that all things that were made are either visible or invisible, or mixed—visible, as the stars and fowls and clouds of heaven, the fish in the sea, and beasts upon the earth; invisible things, as the angels, they also were made; then there is a third sort of creatures which are of a mixed nature, partly visible in regard of their bodies, and partly invisible in regard of their souls, and those are men: Eph. ii. 9, 'Who created all things by Jesus Christ;' Heb. i. 2, 'He hath, in these last days, spoken to us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things; by whom also he made the worlds.' This may seem somewhat difficult, because he speaketh of worlds, whereas we acknowledge but one; but this seeming difficulty you may easily get over if you please but to consider the persons to whom he writes, which were Hebrews, whose custom it was to style God *Rabboni*, *dominus mundorum*, the Lord of the worlds. They were wont to speak of three worlds—the lower world, the higher world, and the middle world: the lower world containeth the elements, earth and water and air and fire; the higher world that containeth the heaven of the blessed; and the middle world that containeth the starry heaven. They now being acquainted with this language, and the apostle writing to them, he saith that God by Christ made the worlds—those worlds which they were wont to speak so frequently of. And whereas one scruple might arise from that expression in the Ephesians, 'God created all things *by* Jesus Christ,' and this to the Hebrews, '*by* whom he made the worlds,' as if Christ were only an instrument in the creation and not the principal efficient; therefore another place in this chapter will clear it, which speaketh of Christ as the principal efficient of all things: Heb. i., compare the 8th and 10th verses together, 'To the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever;' then Christ is God. Then, 'And, Thou, Lord,' ver. 10, 'hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thy hands.' Namely 'thine,' that is, the Son, which he spake of before. Christ is the principal efficient of the creation; and in this sense it is said, 'By him were all things made,' not as by an instrument, but as by the chief efficient. [6.] *The preservation and sustentation of all things*: Col. i. 17. 'By him all things consist.' They would soon fall asunder had not Christ undertaken to uphold the shattered condition thereof by the word of his power. All creatures that are made are preserved by him in being, life, and motion: Heb. i. 3, 'He upholdeth all things by the word of his power.' Both in respect of being, excellencies, and operations, sin had hurled confusion over the world, which would have fallen about Adam's ears had not Christ undertaken the shattered condition thereof, to uphold it. He keeps the world together, saith one, as the hoops do the barrel. Christ bears up all

God: *εἰ ἑμὶ θεός*, &c., saith Pythagoras. If any will assume to himself and say, I am God, except only one, let him lay such a world as this is to stake, and say, This world is mine: then I will believe him, not otherwise, Heb. i. 2, *Δι' οὗ*, not *propter quem*, as Grotius would evade the text 'for' whom he made the worlds, but *per quem*, by whom; so the apostle, to put it out of all doubt, putteth them together: Col. i. 16, 'All things were created by him and for him,' *δι' αὐτοῦ καὶ εἰς αὐτόν*.

things, continuing to the several creatures their being, ordering and governing them, and this he doth by the word of his power. By this word he made the world. 'He spake, and it was done.' And by this word he governeth the world, by his own mighty word, the word of his power. Both these are divine actions, and being ascribed unto Christ, evidence him to be no less than God. Now from what has been said we may thus argue, he to whom those actions are ascribed, which are proper to the most high God, he is the most high God; but such actions or works are ascribed to Christ, *ergo*, he is the most high God. But,

6. Sixthly, Christ's eternal deity may be demonstrated from that *divine honour and worship that is due to him, and by angels and saints given unto him*. The apostle sheweth, Gal. iv. 8, that religious worship ought to be performed to none but to him that is God by nature; and that they are ignorant of the true God who religiously worship them that are no gods by nature; and therefore, if Christ were not God by nature, and consubstantial with the Father, we ought not to perform religious worship to him.¹ Divine worship is due to the second person of this co-essential Trinity, to Jesus Christ our Lord and God. There is but one immediate, formal, proper, adequate, and fundamental reason of divine worship or adorability, as the schools speak, and that is the sovereign, supreme, singular majesty, independent and infinite excellency of the eternal Godhead; for by divine worship we do acknowledge and declare the infinite majesty, truth, wisdom, goodness, and glory of our blessed God. We do not esteem anything worthy of divine honour and worship which hath but a finite and created glory, because divine honour is proper and peculiar to the only true God, who will not give his glory to any other who is not God. God alone is the adequate object of divine faith, hope, love, and worship, because these graces are all exercised, and this worship performed, in acknowledgment of his infinite perfection and independent excellency; and therefore no such worship can be due to any creature or thing below God. There is not one kind of divine honour due to the Father and another to the Son, nor one degree of honour due to the Father and another to the Son; for there can be no degrees imaginable in one and the same excellency, which is single because infinite; and what is infinite doth excel and transcend all degrees and bounds. And if there be no degrees in the ground and adequate reason of divine worship, there can be no reason or ground of a difference of degrees in the worship itself. The Father and the Son are one, John x. 30,—one in power, excellency, nature,—one God, and therefore to be honoured with the same worship, 'that all men should honour the Son even as they honour the Father,' John v. 23. Every tongue must confess that Jesus Christ, who is man, is God also, and therefore equal to his Father, Phil. ii. 6, 11, 12; and it can be no robbery, no derogation to the Father's honour, for us to give equal honour to him and his co-equal Son, who subsists in the form of God, in the nature of God. Thus

¹ This is a clear and full evidence that Jesus Christ is, and must be more than *ψαλος άνθρωπος*, mere man, or yet a divine man, as Dr Lushington styles him in Heb. vii. 22. [In his anonymous 'Expiation of a Sinner, in a Commentary upon the Epistle to the Hebrews.' 1646. Folio.—G.]

you see the divine nature, the infinite excellency of Jesus Christ, is an undeniable ground of this co-equal honour; and therefore the worship due to Christ as God, the same God with his Father, is the very same worship, both for kind and degree, which is due to the Father. But, for the further and clearer opening of this, consider,

(1.) First, that all *inward worship is due to Christ*. As,

[1.] *Believing on him*. Faith is a worship which belongs only to God, enjoined in the first commandment, and against trusting in man there is a curse denounced, Jer. xvii. 5, 6. But Christ commands us to believe in him, John i. xii. John xiv. 1, 'Ye believe in God, believe also in me.' John iii. 16, 'For God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.' Ver. 36, 'He that believeth in the Son hath everlasting life, and he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.' John vi. 47, 'Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that believeth on me hath everlasting life.' The same respect that Christians give unto God the Father, they must also give unto the Son, believing on him; which is an honour due only to God. Other creatures, men and angels, may be believed, but not believed on, rested on. This were to make them gods; this were no less than idolatry.

[2.] Secondly, *Loving of Jesus Christ with all the heart*, commanded above the love, nay, even to the hatred, of father, mother, wife, children, yea, and our own lives, Luke xiv. 26. He who is not disposed, where these loves are incompatible, to hate father and all other relations, for the love of Christ, can be none of his. I ought dearly and tenderly to love father and mother—the law of God and nature requiring it of me,—but to prefer dear Jesus, who is God blessed for ever, before all, and above all, as Paul and the primitive Christians and martyrs have done before me. Your house, home, and goods, your life, and all that ever you have, saith that martyr,¹ God hath given you as love-tokens, to admonish you of his love, to win your love to him again. Now will he try your love, whether you set more by him or by his tokens, &c. When relations or life stand in competition with Christ and his gospel, they are to be abandoned, hated, &c. But,

(2.) Secondly, *All outward worship is due to Christ*. As,

[1.] First, *Dedication in baptism is in his name*. Mat. xxviii. 19, 'Baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:' εἰς τὸ ὄνομα, into the name, by that rite initiating them, and receiving of them into the profession of the service of one God in three persons, and of depending on Christ alone for salvation. Baptizing them into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, is the consecrating of them unto the sincere service of the sacred Trinity.

[2.] Secondly, *Divine invocation is given to Jesus Christ*. Acts vii. 59, 'Stephen calls upon the Lord Jesus to receive his spirit.' 1 Cor. i. 2, 'All that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord.' 1 Thes. iii. 11, 'God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way unto you.' Eph. i. 2, 'Grace

¹ Master Brad[ford], Acts and Mon., fol. 1492. Phil. iii. 7, 8.

be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.' It is the saints' character that they are such as call on the Lord Jesus, Acts ii. 21; Acts ix. 14.¹ But,

[3.] Thirdly, *Praises are offered to our Lord Jesus Christ*: Rev. v. 9, 'And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof; for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation.' Ver. 11, 'And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the beasts, and the elders; and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands.'² Ver. 12, 'Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.' Ver. 13, 'And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb, for ever and ever.' Here you have a catholic confession of Christ's divine nature and power. All the creatures, both reasonable and unreasonable, do in some sort set forth the praises of Christ, because in some sort they serve to illustrate and set forth his glory. Here you see that Christ is adored with religious worship by all creatures, which doth evidently prove that he is God. Since all the creatures worship him with religious worship, we may safely and boldly conclude upon his deity. Here are three parties that bear a part in this new song: 1. The redeemed of the Lord; and they sing in the last part of the 8th verse, and in the 9th and 10th verses. Then, 2, the angels follow, verses 11th and 12th. In the third place, all creatures are brought in, joining in this new song, ver. 13. That noble company of the church triumphant and church militant, sounding out the praises of the Lamb, may sufficiently satisfy us concerning the divinity of the Lamb. But,

[4.] Fourthly, *Divine adoration is also given to him*: Mat. viii. 2, 'A leper worshipped him.' Mark saith he kneeled down, and Luke saith he fell upon his face, Mark i. 40; Luke v. 12. He shewed reverence in his gesture. 'Lord, if thou wilt thou canst make me clean.'³ He acknowledged a divine power in Christ, in that he saith he could make him clean if he would. This poor leper lay at Christ's feet, imploring and beseeching him, as a dog at his master's feet, as Zanchy [*de Red.*] renders the word, which shews that this leper looked upon Christ as more than a prophet or a holy man; and that believing he was God, and so able to heal him if he would, he gave him religious worship. He doth not say to Christ, Lord, if thou wilt pray to God, or to thy Father for me, I shall be whole; but 'Lord, if thou wilt I

¹ Ponder upon these scriptures: 2 Cor. xii. 8, 9; 1 Thes. i. 1; 2 Thes. i. 1, 2; 2 Cor. i. 2.

² This is taken out of Daniel, chap. vii. 10, whereby the glory and power of God and Christ is held forth, they being attended with innumerable millions of angels, which stood before the fiery throne of God, &c.

³ So that he touched Christ his feet, as the word *γονυπετων* signifies; not kneeled, as the word is translated, Mark i. 40. This leper came to know Christ was God, 1. By inspiration; 2. By the miracles which Christ did.

shall be whole.' He acknowledges the leprosy curable by Christ, which he and all men knew was incurable by others, which was a plain argument of his faith; for though the *psora* or scabbedness may be cured, yet that which is called *lepra* physicians acknowledge incurable; for if a particular cancer cannot be cured, much less can a universal cancer. As Avicenna¹ observes: Mat. ii. 11, 'Though the wise men of the east, who saw Herod in all his royalty and glory, worshipped him not, yet they fell down before Christ.' No doubt but that by divine instinct they knew the divinity of Christ, hence they worshipped him, not only with civil worship, as one born king of the Jews, but with divine worship; which was, it is like, the outward gesture of reverence, and kneeling, and falling down, for so the Greek words signify. Is it probable that they would worship a young babe, that by reason of his infancy understands nothing, except they did believe some divine thing to be in him? and therefore not the childhood, but the divinity in the child, was worshipped by them, [Chrysostom.] Certainly if Christ had been no more than a natural child, they would never have undertaken so long, so tedious, and so perilous a journey to have found him out; principally, considering, as some conceive, they themselves were little inferior to the kings of the Jews. It is uncertain what these wise men, who were Gentiles, knew particularly concerning the mystery of the Messiah; but certainly they knew that he was something more than a man, by the internal revelation of the Spirit of God, who by faith taught them to believe that he was a king though in a cottage, and a God though in a cradle; and therefore as unto a God they fell down and worshipped him, &c. But,

[5.] Fifthly, *When Jesus Christ was declared to the world, God did command even the most glorious angels to worship him, as his natural and co-essential Son, who was begotten from the days of eternity, in the unity of the Godhead*; for, when he brought in his first-begotten and only-begotten Son into the world, he said, 'And let all the angels of God worship him,' Heb. i. 6,—the glorious angels who refuse divine honour to be given to themselves: 'See thou do it not,' saith the angel to John, when John fell at his feet to worship him, 'I am thy fellow-servant,' &c., Rev. xix. 10, and xxii. 9; yet they give, and must give, divine honour unto Christ, Phil. ii. 9. The manhood of itself could not be thus adored, because it is a creature, but as it is received into unity of person with the Deity, and hath a partner agency therewith, according to its measure in the work of redemption and mediation. All the honour due to Christ, according to his divine nature, was due from all eternity; and there is no divine honour due to him from and by reason of his human nature, or any perfection which doth truly and properly belong to Christ as man. He who was born of Mary is to be adored with divine worship; but not for that reason, because he was born of Mary, but because he is God, the co-essential and eternal Son of God. From what has been said we may thus argue, He to whom religious worship is truly exhibited, is the most high God. But religious worship is truly exhibited unto Christ, *ergo*, Christ is the most high God. But,

7. Seventhly, Christ's eternal deity may be demonstrated from *Christ's*

¹ Or Ibn-Sina.—G.

oneness with the Father, and from that claim that Jesus Christ doth lay to all that belongs to the Father, as God.¹ Now, certainly, if Jesus Christ were not very God, he would never have laid claim to all that is the Father's, as God. The ancients insist much upon that: John xvi. 15, 'All things that the Father hath,' as God, 'are mine.' The Father hath an eternal godhead, and that is mine; the Father hath infinite power and wisdom, and that is mine; the Father hath infinite majesty and glory, and that is mine; the Father hath infinite happiness and blessedness in himself, and that is mine, saith Christ. The words are very emphatical, having in them a double universality. [1.] 'All things:' there is one note of universality; [2.] 'Whatsoever:' there is another note of universality. Well, saith Christ, there is nothing in the Father, as God, but is mine, 'All that the Father hath is mine;' the Father is God, and I am God; the Father is life, and I am life; for whatsoever the Father hath is mine: John x. 30, 'I and my Father are one;' we are one eternal God, we are one in consent, will, essence, nature, power, dominion, glory, &c., 'I and my Father are one;' two persons, but one God. He speaketh this as he is God, one in substance, being, and deity, &c. As God, he saith, 'I and my Father are one;' but, *secundum formam servi*, in respect of the form of a servant, his assumed humanity, he saith, John xiv. 28, 'My Father is greater than I:' John x. 37, 'If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not:' ver. 38, 'But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works,' &c. The argument of itself is plain. No man can of himself, and by his own power, do divine works, unless he be truly God; I do divine works by my own power, yea, 'I do the works of my Father;' not only the like and equal, but the same with the Father. Therefore I am truly God; neither deserve I to be called a blasphemer, because I said I was one with the Father: 1 John v. 7, 'And these three are one,' one in nature and essence, one in power and will, and one in the act of producing all such actions, as without themselves any of them is said to perform. Look, as three lamps are lighted in one chamber, albeit the lamps be divers, yet the lights cannot be severed; so in the godhead, as there is a distinction of persons, so a simplicity of nature. From the scriptures last cited we may safely and confidently conclude that Christ hath the same divine nature and godhead with the Father, that they both have the same divine and essential titles and attributes, and perform the same inward operations in reference to all creatures whatsoever. To make it yet more plain, compare John xvii. 10 with John xvi. 15. 'All things that the Father hath are mine,' John xvi. 15; 'Father, all mine are thine, and thine are mine,' John xvii. 10. That is, whatsoever doth belong to the Father, as God, doth belong to Christ; for we speak not of personal but essential properties. Christ doth lay claim to all that is natural, to all that belongs to the Father, as God, not to anything which belongs to him as the Father, as the first person of the

¹ Never did any mere creature challenge to himself the honour due to God, but miscarried and were confounded. Witness the angels that God cast out of heaven, 2 Pet. ii. 4; and Adam that he cast out of paradise, Gen. iii. 22-24; and Herod, whom the angel smote with a fatal blow, Acts xii. 23; and those several Popes that we read of in ecclesiastical stories; and therefore had Jesus Christ been but a mere creature, divine justice would have confounded him for making himself a God.

blessed Trinity. 'All things that the Father hath are mine.' This he speaketh in the person of the mediator, 'Because of his fulness we all receive grace for grace,' John i. 16; and herein sheweth the unity of essence in the holy Trinity, and community of power, wisdom, sanctity, truth, eternity, glory, majesty. Such is the strict union of the persons of the blessed Trinity, that there is among them a perfect communion in all things, for 'all things that the Father hath are mine.' And let thus much suffice for the proof of the godhead of Christ.

Concerning the manhood of Christ, let me say, that as he is very God, so he is very man: 1 Tim. ii. 5, 'the man Christ Jesus.' Christ is true man, but not mere man; *verus, sed non merus*. The word is not to be taken exclusively, as denying the divine nature. Christ is Θεάνθρωπος, both God and man; sometimes denominated from the one nature, and sometimes from the other; sometimes called God, and sometimes man; yet so as he is truly both, and in that respect fitly said to be a mediator betwixt God and men, having an interest in and participating of both natures. This title, 'the Son of man,' is given to Christ in the New Testament four score and eight times, the design being not only to express a man, according to the Syrian dialect then used, *ܒܪ ܢܫܐ*, *bar nosho*; nor only to express Christ's humanity, who was truly man, in all things like unto us, sin only excepted; nor only to intimate his humility, by calling himself so often by this humble name; but also to tell us to what a high honour God hath raised our nature in him, and to confute their imaginations who denied him to be very man, flesh, blood, and bones, as we truly are; and who held, that whatever he was, and whatever he did, and whatever he suffered, was only seeming and in appearance, and not real; and to lead us to that original promise, the first that was made to mankind, 'The seed of the woman shall bruise the serpent's head,' Gen. iii. 15, that so he might intimate, saith Epiphanius, that himself was the party meant, intended, and foretold of by all the prophets, who was to come into the world, to all nations in the world. Jews and Gentiles originally alike descended of the woman, who both had a like interest in the woman and her seed, though the Jews did and might challenge greater propriety in the seed of Abraham than the Gentiles could, Rom. iii. 1, 2; but they having been a long time, as it were, God's favourites, a selected people, a chosen nation, did wholly appropriate the Messias to themselves, and would endure no co-partners, Exod. xix. 6; 1 Pet. ii. 9; nor that any should have any right, title, or interest in him but themselves; and therefore they would never talk otherwise than of the Messias, the King of Israel, the son of David, never naming him once the light of the Gentiles, the expectation of the Gentiles, the hope and desire of the eternal hills, the hope of all the ends of the earth, the seed of the woman, the Son of man, as descending from Eve, extracted from Adam, and allied unto all mankind.¹ And it is observable that the evangelist Luke, at the story of Christ's baptism, when he was to be installed into his ministry, and had that glorious testimony from heaven, deriveth his pedigree up to the first Adam, the better to draw all men's eyes to that first promise concerning the seed of the woman, and to cause them to own him for that seed there promised, and for that

¹ Isa. xlii. 6; Hab. iii. 6; Ps. lxxv. 5; Gen. iii. 15; Luke iii. 23, to the end.

effect that is there mentioned of dissolving the works of Satan. And as that evangelist giveth that hint when he is now entering this quarrel with Satan, even in the entrance of his ministry, so doth he very frequently and commonly by this very phrase give the same intimation for the same purpose. No sooner had Nathanael proclaimed him the Son of God: John i. 49, 'Nathanael answered, and said unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel:' but he instantly titles himself the Son of man, ver. 51; not only to shew his humanity, for that Nathanael was assured of by the words of Philip, who calls him Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph, ver. 45; but also to draw the thoughts of the hearers to the first promise, and to work them to look for a full recovery of all that by the second Adam which was lost in the first. Though the gates of heaven were shut against the first Adam by reason of his fall, yet were they open to the second Adam: ver. 51, 'And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you'—this double asseveration, 'Verily, verily,' puts the matter beyond all doubt and controversy—'hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man,'—the Jacob's ladder, the bridge that joineth heaven and earth together, as Gregory hath it.¹ This 51st verse doth greatly illustrate Christ's glory, and further confirm believers' faith, that Christ is Lord of angels even in his state of humiliation, and hath them ready at his call, as he or his people shall need their service, to move from earth to heaven, and from heaven to earth. This title, 'the Son of man,' shews that the Son of God was also the Son of man; and that he delighted to be so, and therefore doth so often take this title to himself, 'the Son of man.'

Now concerning the manhood of Christ, the prophet plainly speaks: Isa. ix. 6, 'Unto us a child is born, and unto us a son was given.' *Parvulus*, a child, that noteth his humanity; *Filius*, a Son, that noteth his deity. *Parvulus*, a child, even man of the substance of his mother, born in the world, Mat. i. 25; *Filius*, a Son, even God of the substance of his Father, begotten before the world, Prov. viii. 22 to the end. *Parvulus*, a child: behold his humility, 'she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger,' Luke ii. 7; *Filius*, a Son: behold his dignity; 'when he bringeth his first-begotten Son into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him,' Heb. i. 6; to prove that he was man, it is enough to say, that he was born, he lived, he died. God became man by a wonderful, unspeakable, and inconceivable union. Behold God is offended by man's affecting and coveting his wisdom and his glory—for that was the devil's temptation to our first parents, 'Ye shall be as gods,' Gen. iii. 5; and man is redeemed by God's assuming and taking his frailty and his infirmity. Man would be as God, and so offended him; and therefore God becomes man, and so redeemeth him. Christ, as man, came of the race of kings; as man he shall judge the world, Acts xvii. 31; as man, he was wonderfully born of a virgin, Mat. i. 23; Isa. vii. 14; called therefore by a peculiar name, *Shiloh*, which signifies a secundine or after-birth, Gen. xlix. 19. The word comes of שלה, which signifies *tranquillum esse*, intimating that Christ is he who has

¹ He alludes to Jacob's ladder, Gen. xxviii. 12.

brought us peace and tranquillity; and that he might be our peace-maker, it was necessary that he should be *Shiloh*, born of the sanctified seed of a woman without the seed of man. The apostle expounds the name where he saith of Christ that he was 'made of a woman,' not of a man and woman both, but of a woman alone without a man, Gal. iv. 4. Christ as man was foretold of by the prophets, and by sundry types. Christ as man was attended upon at his birth by holy angels, and a peculiar star was created for him, Luke ii. 13, 14; Mat. ii. 1, 2. Christ as man was our sacrifice and expiation; he was our *ἀντίλυτρον*, a counterprice, such as we could never have paid, but must have remained, and even rotted in the prison of hell for ever. Christ as man was conceived of the Holy Ghost, Mat. i. 18. Christ as man is ascended into heaven, Acts i. 9, 10. Christ as man sits at the right hand of God, Col. iii. 1. Now what do all these things import, but that Jesus Christ is a very precious and most excellent person, and that even according to his manhood? Christ had the true properties, affections, and actions of man. He was conceived, born, circumcised; he did hunger, thirst; he was clothed; he did eat, drink, sleep, hear, see, touch, speak, sigh, groan, weep, and grow in wisdom and stature, &c., as all the four evangelists do abundantly testify. But because this is a point of grand importance, especially in these days, wherein there are risen up so many deceivers in the midst of us, it may not be amiss to consider of these following particulars,—

(1.) First, Of these special scriptures that speak out the certainty and verity of *Christ's body*: John i. 14, 'And the Word was made flesh;' 1 Tim. iii. 16, 'Without controversy, great is the mystery of godliness, God manifested in the flesh.' Christ is one and the same, begotten of the Father without time, the Son of God without mother; and born of the Virgin in time, the Son of man without father; the natural and consubstantial son of both; and, oh! what a great mystery is this! Heb. ii. 14, 16, 'Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil: for verily he took not on him the nature of angels: but he took on him the seed of Abraham:' according to the Greek *ἐπιλαμβάνεται*, He assumed, caught, laid hold on, as the angels did on Lot, Gen. xix. 16; or as Christ did on Peter, Mat. xiv. 31; or as men use to do upon a thing they are glad they have got, and are loath to let go again. O sirs! this is a main pillar of our comfort, that Christ took our flesh, for if he had not taken our flesh, we could never have been saved by him: Rom. i. 3, 'Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, who was made of the seed of David according to the flesh:' Rom. ix. 5, 'Whose are the fathers, and of whom, as concerning the flesh, Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.' This is a greater honour to all mankind, than if the greatest king in the world should marry into some poor family of his subjects. Christ saith, 'My flesh is meat indeed,' and I say his flesh was flesh indeed; as true, real, proper, very flesh as that which any of us carry about with us: Col. i. 22, 'In the body of his flesh through death;' Heb. x. 5, 'Wherefore when he cometh into the world he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared me.' *Κατηρτίσω*:

It is a metaphor taken from mechanics, who do artificially,¹ fit one part of their work to another, and so finish the whole; God fitted his Son's body to be joined with the deity, and to be an expiatory sacrifice for sin: 1 Pet. ii. 24, 'Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree,' &c. The word *αὐτὸς*, himself, hath a great emphasis, and therefore that evangelical prophet Isaiah mentions it no less than five times in that Isa. liii. 4, 5, 7, 11, 12. Christ had none to help or uphold him under the heavy burden of our sins and his Father's wrath, Isa. lxiii. 3. It is most certain, that in the work of man's redemption Christ had no coadjutor. He who did bear our sins, that is, the punishments that were due to our sins, in his own body on the tree; he did assume flesh, cast into the very mould and form of our bodies, having the same several parts, members, lineaments, the same proportion which they have. Christ's body was no spectrum or phantasm, no putative body, as if it had no being but what was in appearance and from imagination—as the Marcionites, Manichees, and other heretics of old affirmed, and as some men of corrupt minds do assert in our days—but as real, as solid a body as ever any was. And therefore the apostle calls it a body of flesh, Col. i. 22—a body, to shew the organisation of it, and a body of flesh, to shew the reality of it, in opposition to all aerial and imaginary bodies. Christ's body had all the essential properties of a true body; such as are organicalness, extension, local presence, confinement, circumscription, penetrability, visibility, palpability, &c., as all the evangelists do abundantly witness. Take a few instances for all: Luke xxiv. 39, 'Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself, handle me and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones as ye see me have.' Christ here admits of the testimony of their own senses to assure them that it was no vision or spirit, but a true and real body risen from the dead, which they now saw. Certainly whatever is essential to a true glorified body, that is yet in Christ's body. Those stamps of dishonour that the Jews had set upon Christ by wicked hands, those he retained after his resurrection, partly for the confirmation of his apostles, and partly to work us to a willingness and resoluteness to suffer for him when we are called to it: 1 John i. 1, 'That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the word of life.' He alludes to the sermons which he and the other apostles heard from Christ's own mouth, and also to the glorious testimony which the Father gave once and again from heaven to Christ. He alludes also to the miracles that were wrought by Christ, and to that sight that they had of his glory in the mount, and to his resurrection and visible ascension into the highest heaven, Mat. xvii., Acts i. He alludes to the familiar conversation which the apostles had with Christ for about three years, and also to that touching, when after the resurrection Christ offered himself to the apostles that believed not in him to touch him, Luke xxiv. The truth of these things were confirmed to them by three senses—hearing, seeing, handling, the latter still surer than the former; and this proves Christ to be a true man, as his being from the beginning sets

¹ Artfully = skilfully.—G.

out his deity. Christ had also those natural affections, passions, infirmities, which are proper to a body, as hunger: Mat. iv. 2, 'When he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterwards an hungered.' All Christ's actions are for our instruction, not all for our imitation. Matthew expressly makes mention of nights, lest it should be thought to be such a fast as that of the Jews, who fasted in the day, and did eat at the evening and in the night, [Chernitius.] He would not extend his fast above the term of Moses and Elias, lest he should have seemed to have appeared only, and not to have been, a true man. He was hungry, not because his fasting wrought upon him, but because God left man to his own nature, [Hilary.] It seems Christ felt no hunger till the forty days and forty nights were expired, but was kept by the power of the Deity, as the three children, or rather champions, from feeling the heat of the fire, Dan. iii. 27. Christ fasted forty days and forty nights, and not longer, lest he might be thought not to have a true human body; for Moses and Elias had fasted thus long before, but never did any man fast longer. When Christ began to be hungry the tempter came to him, not when he was fasting. The devil is cunning, and will take all the advantage he can upon us. During the forty days and forty nights the devil stood doubtful, and durst not assault the Lord Jesus, partly because of that voice he heard from heaven, 'This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased,' Mat. iii. 17, and partly because his forty days and forty nights' fast did portend some great thing; but now, seeing Christ to be hungry, he impudently assaults him. Christ was not hungry all the forty days; but after, he was hungry, to shew he was man. Some think that Christ by his hunger did objectively allure Satan to tempt him, that so he might overcome him, as soldiers sometimes feign a running away, that they may the better allure their enemies closely to pursue them, that so they may cut them off, either by an ambush or by an orderly facing about: so the devil tempted Christ as man, not knowing him to be God; or if he did know him to be God, Christ did as it were encourage his cowardly enemy, that durst not set upon him as God, shewing himself to be man. And as Christ was hungry, so Christ was thirsty: John iv. 7, 'There came a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me drink.' Here you see that he that is rich and Lord of all became poor for us, that he might make us rich, 2 Cor. viii. 9; and he that gives to all the creatures their meat in due season, Ps. civ. 27, he begs water of a poor tankard-bearer to refresh himself in his weariness and thirst: John xix. 28, 'Jesus saith, I thirst.' Bleeding breeds thirsting. Sleeping: Mat. viii. 24, he was asleep, to shew the truth of the human nature, and the weakness of his disciples' faith. Christ was in a fast and dead sleep, for so much the Greek word, *ἐκάθευδε*, signifies: his senses were well and fast bound, as if he had no operation of life, and therefore the disciples are said to raise him, as it were from the dead. The same Greek word is used in many places where mention is made of the resurrection, as you may see by comparing the scriptures in the margin together.¹ He was asleep, [1.] By reason of his labour in preaching and journey he slept; [2.] To shew forth the truth of his human nature. Some think

¹ John ii. 19; Mat. xxvii. 52; 1 Cor. xv. 12.

the devil stirred up the storm, hoping thereby to drown Christ and his disciples, as he had destroyed Job's children in a tempest before, Job i. 18, 19; but though Satan had malice and will enough to do it, yet he had not power; yea, though Christ slept in his human nature, yet was he awake in his deity, that the disciples being in danger might cry unto him more fervently, and be saved more remarkably. And as Jesus slept, so he was also weary: John iv. 6, 'Now Jacob's well was there; Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour,' about noon. In the heat of the day Christ was weary. Christ took on him not only our nature, but the common infirmities thereof, and he is to be as seriously eyed in his humanity as in the glory of his godhead. Therefore it is recorded that he was weary with his journey ere half the day was spent; and that through weariness 'he sat thus on the well;' that is, even as the seat offered, or as weary men use to sit, &c. But, in a word, he was conceived, retained so long in the virgin's womb, born, circumcised, lived about thirty years on earth, conversed all that time with men, suffered, died, and was crucified, buried, rose again, ascended, and sat down with his body at the right hand of God, and with it will come again to judge the world. Now what do all these things speak out, but that Christ hath a true body? and who in their wits will assert that all this could be done in, and upon, and by, an imaginary body? But,

(2.) Secondly, *The several denominations that are given to Jesus Christ in Scripture* do clearly evidence the verity and reality of his human nature. He is called (1.) The son of the virgin, Isa. vii. 14: (2.) Her first-born son, Luke ii. 7: (3.) The branch, Zech. iii. 8, and vi. 12: (4.) The branch of righteousness, Jer. xxxiii. 15, and xxiii. 5: (5.) A rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a branch out of his roots, Isa. xi. 1: (6.) The seed of the woman, Gen. iii. 15: (7.) The seed of Abraham, Gen. xxii. 18: (8.) The fruit of David's loins, Ps. lxxx. 36, and cxxxii. 11; Acts ii. 30: (9.) Of the seed of David according to the flesh, Rom. i. 3; 2 Sam. vii. 2: (10.) The lion of the tribe of Judah, Rev. v. 5: (11.) The seed of Jacob, Gen. xxviii. 14: (12.) The seed of Isaac, Gen. xxvi. 4: (13.) A son born to us, a child given to us, Isa. ix. 6: (14.) The son of man, Mat. viii. 20, and xvii. 13; Rev. i. 13; Dan. vii. 13; John iii. 13: (15.) He is called the man Christ Jesus, 1 Tim. ii. 5; 1 Cor. xv. 21, 'Since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.' God's justice would be satisfied in the same nature that had sinned: (16.) God's Son made of a woman, Gal. iv. 4: (17.) Man, 1 Tim. ii. 5; the man Christ Jesus: (18.) The son of David, Mat. i. 1; Mark xii. 35. 'How say the scribes, that Christ is the son of David?' In that the scribes and Pharisees knew and acknowledged, according to the Scripture, that Christ should be the son of David—that is, should be born and descend of the stock and posterity of David according to the flesh,—hence we may easily gather the truth of Christ's human nature, that he was ordained of God to be true man as well as God, in one and the same person; for else he could not be the son of David. Now, that he must be the son of David, even the scribes and the Pharisees knew and acknowledged, as we see here; and this was a

truth which they had learned out of the Scriptures; and not only they, but even the common sort of Jews in our Saviour's time: John vii. 42, some of the common people spake thus, 'Hath not the Scripture said that Christ cometh of the seed of David?' And the Messiah was then commonly called the son of David, Rom. i. 3. So then, Christ being of the seed of David after the flesh, he must needs be true man as well as God; for which cause he was incarnate in the due time appointed of God; that is to say, he being the Son of God from everlasting, did in time become man, taking our nature upon him, together with the infirmities of our nature, sin only excepted, John i. 14. Now thus you see that the eighteen denominations that are given to Christ in the blessed Scriptures do abundantly demonstrate the certainty of Christ's human nature. But,

(3.) Thirdly, *Christ took the whole human nature.* He was truly and completely man, consisting of flesh and spirit, body and soul; yea, that he assumed the entire human nature, with whatever is proper to it. Christ took to himself the whole human nature, in both the essential parts of man, soul and body. The two essential and constitutive parts of man are soul and body; where these two are, there is the true man. Now Christ had both, and therefore he was true man.

[1.] First, Christ had a true human and reasonable soul. The reasonable soul is the highest and noblest part of man. This is that which principally makes the man, and hath the greatest influence into his being and essence. If, therefore, Jesus Christ had only a human body without a human soul, he had wanted that part which is most essential to man, and so he could not have been looked upon as true and perfect man. O sirs! Christ redeemed and saved nothing but what he assumed. The redemption and salvation reach no further than the assumption. Our soul then would have been never the better for Christ, had he not taken that as well as our body. Hence said Augustine,¹ 'Therefore he took the whole man without sin, that he might heal the whole of which man consists, of the plague of sin. And Fulgentius, to the same purpose:² As the devil smote by deceiving the whole man, so God saves by assuming the whole man. If he will save the whole man from sin, he will assume the whole man without sin, saith Nazianzen. The Scriptures do clearly evidence that Christ had a real human soul: Mat. xxvi. 38, 'My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death.' Every word is emphatical: 'My soul;' his sorrows pierced his soul, and 'sorrowful round about,' even to death, *περίλυπός*—that is, 'heavy round about,' Ps. xxii. 16. Look, as the soul was the first agent in transgression, so it is here the first patient in affliction. 'To death;' that is, this sorrow will never be finished or intermitted but by death. 'My soul is *exceeding sorrowful*.' Then Christ had a true human soul; neither was his deity to him for a soul, as, of old, men of corrupt minds have fancied; for then our bodies only had been redeemed by him, and not our souls, if he had not suffered in soul as well as in body. The sufferings of his body were but the body of his sufferings; the soul of his suffer-

¹ Aug. de civ. Dei, lib. x. c. 27, p. 586.

² Fulgent. ad Thrasymund, lib. i. p. 251.

ings were the sufferings of his soul, which was now beset with sorrows, and heavy as heart could hold: John xii. 27, 'Now is my soul troubled, and what shall I say?' The Greek word signifies a vehement commotion and perturbation; as Herod's mind was troubled when he heard that a new king was born, Mat. ii. 3; or as the disciples were troubled when they thought they saw a spirit walking on the sea, and cried out for fear, Mat. xiv. 26; or as Zacharias, Luke i. 12, was troubled at the sudden sight of the angel. The rise and cause of Christ's soul-trouble was this: the Godhead hiding itself from the humanity's sense; and the Father letting out, not only an apprehension of his sufferings to come, but a present taste of the horror of his wrath, due to man for sin. He is amazed, overwhelmed, and perplexed with it in his humanity; and no wonder, since he had the sins of all the elect, laid upon him by imputation, to suffer for. And so this wrath is not let out against his person, but against their sins which were laid on him. Now though Christ was here troubled, or jumbled and puzzled, as the word imports, yet we are not to conceive that there was any sin in this exercise of his, for he was like clean water in a clean vessel, which, being never so often stirred and shaken, yet still keeps clean and clear. Neither are we to think it strange that the Son of God should be put to such perplexities in this trouble as not to know what to say; for considering him as man, encompassed with our sinless infirmities, and that this heavy weight of wrath did light upon him on a sudden, it is no wonder that it did confound all his thoughts as man. O sirs! look, that as sin has infected both the souls and bodies of the elect, and chiefly their souls, where it hath its chief seat, so Christ, to expiate this sin, did suffer unspeakable sorrows and trouble in his soul, as well as torture in his body; 'for my soul is troubled,' saith he. Though some sufferings of the body be very exquisite and painful, and Christ's in particular were such, yet sad trouble of mind is far more grievous than any bodily distress, as Christ also found, who silently bare all his outward troubles, but yet could not but cry out of his inward trouble, 'Now is my soul troubled.' Isa. liii. 10, 'Thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin,' Isa. liii. 7; 1 Pet. ii. 24. When Christ suffered for us, our sins were laid upon him, ver. 5, 6, as by the law of sacrificing of old, the sinner was to lay his hands upon the head of the beast, confessing his sins, and then the beast was slain, and offered for expiation, Lev. viii. 14, 18, 22; thus having the man's sins as it were taken and put upon it, and hereby the sinner is made righteous. The sinner could never be pardoned, nor the guilt of sin removed, but by Christ's making his soul an offering for sin. What did Christ in special recommend to God, when he was breathing out his last gasp, but his soul? Luke xxiii. 46, 'When Jesus had cried out with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit; and having said thus, he gave up the ghost;' that is, To thy safe custody and blessed tuition I commend my soul, as a special treasure or jewel, most charily and tenderly to be preserved and kept: Luke ii. 52, 'He increased in wisdom and stature;' here is stature for his body, and wisdom for his soul. His growth in that speaks the truth of the former, and his growth in this the truth of the latter: his body pro-

perly could not grow in wisdom, nor his soul in stature, therefore he must have both. There are two essential parts which make up one of his natures, his manhood, viz., soul and body, but both of these two of old have been denied. Marcion divests Christ of a body, and Apollinaris of a soul; and the Arians held that Christ had no soul, but that the deity was to him instead of a soul, and supplied the office thereof, that what the soul is to us, and doth in our bodies, all that the divine nature was to Christ, and did in his body; and are there not some among us, that make a great noise about a light in them, that dash upon the same rock? But the choice scriptures last cited may serve sufficiently to confute all such brain-sick men. But,

[2.] Secondly, As Christ had a true human and reasonable soul, so Christ had *a perfect, entire, complete body, and everything which is proper to a body*; for instance, (1.) He had blood: Heb. ii. 14, 'He also took part of the same,' that is, of flesh and blood. Christ had in him the blood of a man. Shedding of blood there must be, for without it there is no remission of sin, Heb. ix. 22. The blood of brute creatures could not wash away the blots of reasonable creatures, Heb. x. 4, 5, 10; wherefore Christ took our nature, that he might have our blood to shed for our sins. There is an emphasis put upon Christ as man, in the great business of man's salvation, 'The man Christ Jesus,' 1 Tim. ii. 5; the remedy carrying in it a suitableness to the malady, the sufferings of a man to expiate the sin of man. (2.) He had bones as well as flesh: Luke xxiv. 39, 'A spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.' (3.) Christ had in him the bowels of a man, Phil. ii. 8, which bowels he fully expressed when he was on earth, Mat. xii. 18-20; nay, he retaineth those bowels now he is in heaven; in glory he hath a fellow-feeling of his people's miseries: Acts ix. 4, 'Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?' See Mat. xxv. 35, to the end of that chapter. Though Christ in his glorified state be freed from that state of frailty, passibility, mortality, yet he still retains his wonted pity. (4.) He had in him the familiarity of a man; how familiarly did Christ converse with all sorts of persons in this world, all the evangelists do sufficiently testify. Man is a sociable and familiar creature; Christ became man that he might be a merciful high priest, Heb. ii. 17; not that his becoming man made him more merciful, as though the mercies of a man were more than the mercies of God, but because by this means mercy is conveyed more suitably and familiarly to man. But,

(4.) Fourthly and lastly, Our Lord Jesus Christ *took our infirmities upon him*. When Christ was in this world he submitted to the common accidents, adjuncts, infirmities, miseries, calamities, which are incident to human nature. For the opening of this, remember there are three sorts of infirmities; (1.) There are sinful infirmities: James v. 7; Ps. lxxvii. 10. The best of men are but men at the best. Witness Abraham's unbelief, David's security, Job's cursing, Jonah his passion, Thomas his unbelief, Peter's lying, &c. Now these infirmities Jesus Christ took not upon him; for though he was made like unto us in all things, yet without sin, Heb. iv. 15. (2.) There are personal infirmities, which from some particular causes befall this or that person; as leprosy, blindness, dumbness, palsy, dropsy, epilepsy, stone,

gout, sickness. Christ was never sick. Sickness arises from the unfit or unequal temperature of the humours, or from intemperance of labour, study, &c., but none of these were in Christ. He had no sin, and therefore no sickness. Christ took not the passions or infirmities which were proper to this or that man. (3.) There are natural infirmities which belong to all mankind since the fall; as hunger, thirst, wearisomeness, sorrowfulness, sweating, bleeding, wounds, death, burial. Now these natural infirmities that are common to the whole nature, these Jesus Christ took upon him, as all the evangelists do abundantly testify. Our dear Lord Jesus he lay so many weeks and months in the Virgin's womb; he received nourishment and growth in the ordinary way; he was brought forth and bred up just as common infants are; he had his life sustained by common food, as ours is; he was poor, afflicted, reproached, persecuted, tempted, deserted, falsely accused, &c.; he lived an afflicted life, and died an accursed death; his whole life, from the cradle to the cross, was made up of nothing but sorrows and sufferings; and thus you see that Jesus Christ did put himself under those infirmities which properly belong to the common nature of man, though he did not take upon him the particular infirmities of individuals.¹ Now what do all these things speak out, but the certainty and reality of Christ's manhood?

Quest. But *why must Christ partake of both natures? was it absolutely necessary that he should so do?* *Ans.* Yea, it was absolutely necessary that Christ should partake of both natures; and that both in respect of God, and in respect of us: (1.) First, in respect of us: and that,

[1.] First, *Because man had sinned, and therefore man must be punished.* By man came death, therefore by man must come the resurrection of the dead, 1 Cor. xv. 21. Man was the offender, therefore man must be the satisfier; man had been the sinner, and therefore man must be the sufferer. It is but justice to punish sin in that nature, in which it had been committed. By man we fell from God, and by man we must be brought back to God. By the first Adam we were ruined, by the second Adam we must be repaired, Rom. v. 12. The human nature was to be redeemed, therefore it was necessary that the human nature should be assumed. The law was given to man, and the law was broken by man, and therefore it was necessary that the law should be fulfilled by man. But,

[2.] Secondly, *That by this means the justice of God might be satisfied in the same nature which had sinned, which was the nature of man.* Angels could not satisfy divine justice, because they had no bodies to suffer. The brutish sensible creatures could not satisfy the justice of God, because they had no souls to suffer. The sensible creatures could not satisfy divine justice, because they had no sense to suffer. Therefore man, having body, soul, and sense, must do it; for he had sinned in all, and he could suffer in all.

(2.) Secondly, There are reasons both *in respect of God and in respect of ourselves*, why Jesus Christ should be God, and God-man also; and they are these five:—

[1.] First, *That he might be a meet mediator between God and*

¹ Printed curiously 'individuum,' the Latinised and transition form.—G.

man. Christ's office, as mediator, was to deal with God for man, and to deal for God with man. Now that he might be fit for both these transactions, for both parts of this office, he must partake of both natures. That he might effectually deal with God for man, he must be God, 'If a man sin against the Lord, who shall entreat for him?' saith Eli to his sons, 1 Sam. ii. 25. And that he might deal for God with man, he must be man. He must be God, that he may be fit to transact, treat, and negotiate with God; and he must be man, that he may be fit to transact, treat, and negotiate with man. When God spake unto Israel at Mount Sinai at the giving of the law, the people were not able to abide that voice or presence, and therefore they desired an *Internunciatus*, a man like themselves, who might be as a mediator to go betwixt God and them, Exod. xx. 18, 19. Now upon this very ground, besides many others that might be mentioned, it was very requisite that Jesus Christ should be both God and man, that he might be a meet mediator to deal betwixt God and man, Heb. xii. 18. Jesus Christ was the fittest person, either in that upper or in this lower world, to mediate between God and us. There was none fit to umpire the business between God and man, but he that was God-man. Job hit the nail when he said, 'Neither is there any days-man betwixt us, that might lay his hand upon us both,' Job ix. 33. There was a double use of the days-man, and his laying his hand upon them: (1.) To keep the dissenting parties asunder, lest they should fall out and strike one another; (2.) To keep them together, and compose all differences, that they might not depart from each other. The application is easy. Man is not fit to mediate, because man is the person offending; angels are not fit to mediate, for they cannot satisfy divine justice, nor pacify divine wrath, nor procure our pardon, nor make our peace, nor bring in an everlasting righteousness upon us. God, the Father, was not fit for this work, for he was the person offended; and he was as much too high to deal with man, as man was too low to deal with God. The Holy Ghost was not fit for this work, for it is his work to apply this mediation, and to clear up the believer's interest in this mediation. So then there is no other person fit for this office but Jesus Christ, who was a middle person, betwixt both, that he might deal with both. Christ could never have been fit to be the mediator in respect of his office, if he had not first been a middle person in respect of his natures; for, saith the apostle, Gal. iii. 20, 'Now a mediator is not a mediator of one; but God is one.' 'A mediator is not a mediator of one,' that is, of one party, but is always of two differing parties to unite them; 'not of one;' that is, (1.) Not of one person, because mediation implies more persons than one; it necessarily supposes different parties betwixt whom he doth mediate. Christ, to speak after the manner of men, lays his hand upon God, the Father, and saith, O blessed Father, wilt thou be at peace with these poor sinners? wilt thou pardon them? and wilt thou lift up the light of thy countenance upon them? If thou wilt, then I will undertake to satisfy thy justice, and to pacify thy wrath, and to fulfil thy royal law, and to make good all the wrong they have done against thee. And then he layeth his hand upon the poor sinner, and saith, Sinner, art thou willing to be changed and renewed? art thou willing to come

under the bond of the covenant? art thou willing to give up thy heart and life to the guidance and government of the Spirit? Then be not discouraged, for thou shalt certainly be justified and saved. (2.) Not of one nature—the mediator must necessarily have more natures than one—he must have the divine and human nature united in his single person, or else he could never suffer what he was to suffer, nor never satisfy what he was to satisfy, nor never bring poor sinners into a state of reconciliation with God; and it is further observable that the text last cited saith, ‘God is one,’ 1 Tim. ii. 5; viz., as he is essentially considered, and therefore as so he cannot be the mediator; but Christ, as personally considered, he ‘is not of one,’ that is, not of one nature, for he is God and man too, and therefore he is the only person that is fitted and qualified to be the mediator; and it is observable that, when Christ is spoken of as mediator, his manhood is brought in, that nature being so necessary to that office: 1 Tim. ii. 5, ‘For there is one God, and one mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus.’ Jesus Christ was God and man; as man he ought to satisfy, but could not; as God he could satisfy, but ought not. But consider him as God and man, and so he both could satisfy and ought to satisfy, and accordingly he did satisfy, according to what was prophesied of him: Dan. ix. 24, ‘He did make reconciliation for iniquity, and brought in everlasting righteousness.’ He did not begin to do something and then faint and leave his work imperfect, but he finished it, and that to the glory of his Father: John xvii. 4, ‘I have glorified thee on the earth, I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.’ And it is good to observe the singularity and oneness of the person mediating; not many, not a few, not two, but one mediator between God and man. There was none with him in his difficult work of mediatorship, but he carried it on alone. Though there are many mediators among men, yet there is but *εἰς μεσίτης*, one only mediator betwixt God and men: and it is as high folly and madness to make more mediators than one, as it is to make more Gods than one, Isa. lxiii. 3. ‘There is one God, and one mediator betwixt God and men;’ for look, as one husband satisfies the wife, as one father satisfies the child, as one lord satisfies the servant, and one sun satisfies the world, so one mediator is enough to satisfy all the world, that desire a mediator, or that have an interest in a mediator.¹ The true sense and import of this word *μεσίτης*, a mediator, is a middle person, or one that interposes betwixt two parties at variance, to make peace betwixt them. Though *μεσίτης*, a mediator, be rendered variously, sometimes an umpire or arbitrator, sometimes a messenger betwixt two persons, sometimes an interpreter imparting the mind of one to another, sometimes a reconciler or peace-maker; yet this word, *μεσίτης*, doth most properly signify a mediator or a middler, because Jesus Christ is both a middle person, and a middle officer betwixt God and man, to reconcile and reunite God and man. This of all others is the most proper and genuine

¹ I confess the word *μεσίτης* is given to Moses, in that Gal. iii. 19, but Moses was but a typical mediator, and you never find that Moses is called a mediator in a way of redemption, or satisfaction, or paying a ransom; for so dear Jesus is the only mediator: so the word *μεσίτης* is used in that 1 Tim. ii. 5; Heb. viii. 6–8, ix. 14, 15, and xii. 22–24.

signification of this name *μεσίτης*, Jesus Christ is the middle, that is, the second person in the Trinity, betwixt the Father and the Holy Ghost. He is the only middle person betwixt God and man, being in one person God-man; and his being a middle person fits and capacitates him to stand in the midst between God and us. And as he is the middle person, so he is the middle officer, intervening or interposing or coming between God and man by office, satisfying God's justice to the full for man's sins by his sufferings and death, and maintaining our constant peace in heaven by his meritorious intercession. Hence, as one observes, [Gerhard,] Jesus Christ is a true mediator, is still found *in medio*, in the middle. He was born, as some think, from Wisd. xviii. 14, about the middle of the night; he suffered, Heb. xiii. 12, in the middle of the world, that is, at Jerusalem, seated in the middle of the earth: he was crucified in the midst, between the two thieves, John xix. 18: he died in the air on the cross, in the midst between heaven and earth: he stood after his resurrection in the midst of his disciples, John xx. 19; and he has promised, that where two or three are gathered together in his name, he will be in the midst of them, Mat. xviii. 20: and he walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks, Rev. ii. 1, that is, the churches: and he as the heart in the midst of the body, distributes spirits and virtue to all the parts of his mystical body, Eph. iv. 15, 16. Thus Jesus Christ is the mediator betwixt God and man; middle in person and middle in office. And thus you have seen at large what a meet mediator Jesus Christ is, considered in both his natures, considered as God-man. But,

[2.] Secondly, *If Jesus Christ be not God, then there is no spiritual nor eternal good to be expected or enjoyed.* If Christ be not God, our preaching is in vain, and your hearing is in vain, and your praying is in vain, and your believing is in vain, and your hope of pardon and forgiveness by Jesus Christ is in vain; for none can forgive sins but a God. Christ hath promised that 'believers shall never perish;' he hath promised them 'eternal life,' and that he will 'raise them up at the last day,' he has promised 'a crown of righteousness,' he has promised 'a crown of life,' he has promised 'a crown of glory,' he has promised that conquering Christians shall 'sit down with him in his throne, as he is set down with his Father in his throne:' he has promised that they shall not be hurt of 'the second death.'¹ And a thousand other good things Jesus Christ has promised; but if Jesus Christ be not God, how shall these promises be made good? If a man that hath never a foot of land in England, nor yet worth one groat in all the world, shall make his will, and bequeath to thee such and such houses, and lands, and lordships in such a county or such a county; and shall by will, give thee so much in plate, and so much in jewels, and so much in ready money; whereas he is not, upon any account, worth one penny in all the world; certainly such legacies will never make a man the richer nor the happier. None of those great and precious promises, which are hinted at above, will signify anything, if Christ be not God; for they can neither refresh us, nor cheer us in

¹ Mark ii. 7; John iii. 16; John x. 28; 2 Tim. iv. 8; James i. 12; 1 Pet. v. 4; Rev. iii. 21, and ii. 11.

this world, nor make us happy in that other world. If Christ be not God, how can he purchase our pardon, procure our peace, pacify divine wrath, and satisfy infinite justice? A man may satisfy the justice of man, but who but a God can satisfy the justice of God? 'Will God accept of thousands of rams, or ten thousands of rivers of oil, or the firstborn of thy body for the sin of thy soul?' Micah vi. 7. Oh, no! he will not, he cannot. That scripture is worthy to be written in letters of gold: Acts xx. 28, 'Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers; to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.' This must needs relate to Christ, and Christ is here called God, and Christ's blood is called the blood of God; and without a peradventure Christ could never have gone through with the purchase of the church, if the blood he shed had not been the blood of God. This blood is called God's own blood, because the Son of God, being and remaining true God, assumed human flesh and blood in unity of person. By this phrase, that which appertaineth to the humanity of Christ is attributed to his divinity, because of the union of the two natures in one person, and communion of properties. The church is to Christ a bloody spouse, an Aceldama or field of blood: for she could not be redeemed with silver and gold, but with the blood of God, 1 Pet. i. 18, 19: so it is called by a communication of properties, to set forth the incomparable value and virtue thereof. But,

[3.] *Thirdly, If Christ be not God, yea, God-man, then we shall never be able to answer all the challenges that either divine justice or Satan can make upon us.* Whatsoever the justice of God can exact, that the blood of God can discharge. Now the blood of Christ is the blood of God, as I have evidenced in the second reason. By reason of the hypostatical union, the human nature being united to the divine, the human nature did suffer, the divine did satisfy. Christ's godhead did give both majesty and efficacy to his sufferings. Christ was sacrifice, priest, and altar. He was sacrifice as he was man, priest as he was God and man, and altar as he was God. It is the property of the altar to sanctify the thing offered on it, Mat. xxiii. 19; so the altar of Christ's divine nature sanctified the sacrifice of his death, and made it meritorious. Man sinned, and therefore man must satisfy. Therefore the human nature must be assumed by a surety, for man cannot do it. If an angel should have assumed human nature, it would have polluted him. Human nature was so defiled by sin that it could not be assumed by any but God. Now Christ being God, the divine nature purified the human nature which he took, and so it was a sufficient sacrifice, the person offered in sacrifice being God as well as man. This is a most noble ground upon which a believer may challenge Satan to say his worst and to do his worst. Let him present God as terrible, yea, as a consuming fire, Heb. xii. 29; let him present me as odious and abominable in the sight of God, as once he did Joshua, Zech. iii. 2, 3; let him present me before the Lord as vile and mercenary, as once he did Job, chap. i. 9-11; let him aggravate the height of God's displeasure, and the height and depth and length and breadth of my sins, I shall readily grant all, and against all this I will set the infinite satisfaction

of dear Jesus. This I know, that though the justice of God cannot be avoided nor bribed, yet it may be satisfied. Here is a proportionable satisfaction, here is God answering God. It is a very noble plea of the apostle, 'Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died,' Rom. viii. 34. Let Satan urge the justice of God as much as he can, I am sure that the justice of God makes me sure of salvation; and the reason is evident, because his justice obligeth him to accept of an adequate satisfaction of his own appointing, 1 John i. 7-9. The justice of God maketh me sure of mine own happiness, because if God be just, that satisfaction should be had, when that satisfaction is made, justice requireth that the person for whom it is made shall be received into favour. I confess that unless God had obliged himself by promise, there were no pressing his justice thus far, because *noxæ sequitur caput*. There was mercy in the promise of sending Christ, out of mercy to undertake for us, otherwise we cannot say that God was bound in justice to accept of satisfaction, unless he had first in mercy been pleased to appoint the way of a surety, Gen. ii. 15.¹ Justice indeed required satisfaction, but it required it of the person that sinneth: Gen. ii. 17, 'But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it; for in the day thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die'—or dying thou shalt die; or, as others read the words, thou shalt surely and shortly or suddenly die; and, without controversy, every man should die the same day he is born. 'The wages of sin is death,' Rom. vi. 23; and this wages should be presently paid, did not Christ, as a boon, beg poor sinners' lives for a season: for which cause he is called the Saviour of all men, 1 Tim. iv. 10—not of eternal preservation, but of temporal reservation. It was free and noble mercy to all mankind, that dear Jesus was promised and provided, sealed and sent into the world, John vi. 27, that some might be eternally saved, and the rest preserved from wrath for a time. Here cometh in mercy, that a surety shall be accepted; and what he doth is as if the person that offended should have done it himself. Here is mercy and salvation surely bottomed upon both. Ah, what sweet and transcendent comfort flows from this very consideration, that Christ is God! But,

[4.] Fourthly, *The great and glorious majesty of God required it, that Christ should be God*. God the Father being a God of infinite holiness, purity, justice, and righteousness, none but he who was very God, who was essentially one with the Father, could or durst interpose between God and fallen man, John x. 30, and xiv. 9-11, &c. The angels, though they are glorious creatures, yet they are but creatures; and could these satisfy divine justice, and bear infinite wrath, and purchase divine favour, and reconcile us to God, and procure our pardon, and change our hearts, and renew our natures, and adorn our souls with grace? and yet all these things must be done, or we undone, and that for ever! Now if this were a work too high for angels, then we may safely conclude that it was a work too hard for fallen man. Man was once the mirror of all understanding, the hieroglyphic of wisdom, but now *quantum mutatus ab illo*, there is a great alteration; for poor sorry man is now sent to school to learn wisdom and instruc-

¹ Had not Christ stepped in between man's sin and God's wrath, the world had fallen about Adam's ears.

tion of the beasts, birds, and creeping things, he is sent to the pismire to learn providence, Prov. vi. 6, to the stork and to the swallow to learn to make a right use of time, Jer. viii. 7, to the ox and the ass to learn knowledge, Isa. i. 3, and to the fowls of the air to learn confidence, Mat. vi. Man that was once a master of knowledge, a wonder of understanding, perfect in the science of all things, is now grown blockish, sottish, and senseless, and therefore altogether unfit and unable to make his peace with God, to reconcile himself to God, &c. But,

[5.] Fifthly and lastly, *That Christ's sufferings and merits might be sufficient, it was absolutely necessary that he should be God.* The sin of man was infinite, I mean infinitely punishable; if not infinite in number, yet infinite in nature, every offence being infinite, it being committed against an infinite God. No creature could therefore satisfy for it, but the sufferer must be God, that so his infiniteness might be answerable to the infiniteness of men's offences. There was an absolute necessity of Christ's sufferings, partly because he was pleased to substitute himself in the sinner's stead, and partly because his sufferings only could be satisfactory. Now, unless he had been man, how could he suffer? and unless he had been God, how could he satisfy offended justice? Look, as he must be more than man, that he may be able to suffer, that his sufferings may be meritorious, so he must be man, that he may be in a capacity to suffer, die, and obey; for these are no work for one who is only God. A God only cannot suffer, a man only cannot merit; God cannot obey, man is bound to obey; wherefore Christ, that he might obey and suffer, he was man; and that he might merit by his obedience and suffering, he was God-man; just such a person did the work of redemption call for. That Christ's merits might be sufficient, he must be God; for sufficient merit for mankind could not be in the person of any mere man, no, not in Christ himself, considered only as man; for so all the grace he had he did receive it, and all the good he did he was bound to do it; for he 'was made of a woman, and made under the law,' Gal. iv. 4—not only under the ceremonial law as he was a Jew, but under the moral as a man, for it is under that law under which we were, and from which we are redeemed, Gal. iii. 13—therefore in fulfilling it he did no more than that which was his duty to do; he could not merit by it, no, not for himself, much less for others, considered only as man; therefore he must also be God, that the dignity of his person might add dignity, and virtue, and value to his works. In a word, *Deus potuit, sed non debuit; homo debuit, sed non potuit*—God could, but he should not; man should, but he could not make satisfaction; therefore he that would do it must be both God and man. *Torris erutus ab igne?* as the prophet speaketh; 'Is not this a firebrand taken out of the fire?' Zech. iii. 2. You know that in a firebrand taken out of the fire, there is fire and wood inseparably mixed, and in Christ there is God and man wonderfully united. He was God, else neither his sufferings nor his merits could have been sufficient; and if his could not, much less any man's else; for all other men are both conceived and born in original sin, and also much and often defiled with actual sin, and therefore we ought for ever to abhor all such Popish doctrines, prayers, and masses for the dead, which

exalt man's merits, man's satisfaction: 'For no man can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him; for the redemption of their soul is precious, and it ceaseth for ever,' Ps. xlix. 7, 8. And therefore all the money that hath been given for masses, dirges, trentals,¹ &c., hath been cast away; for Jesus Christ, who is God-man, is the only Redeemer, and in the other world money beareth no mastery. Let me make a few inferences from what has been said; and therefore,

1. First, Is it so, that Christ is God-man, that he is God and man? Then *let this raise our faith, and strengthen our faith, in our Lord Jesus Christ.* Faith is built on God, 1 Pet. i. 21. Now, Jesus Christ is very God, and therefore the fittest foundation in the world for us to build our faith upon. 'God manifest in the flesh' is a firm basis for faith and comfort. 'He is able to save to the uttermost,' Heb. vii. 25. Christ is a thorough Saviour, he saves perfectly, and he saves perpetually; he never carries on redemption work by halves.² Christ being God as well as man, is able, by the power of his godhead, to vanquish death, devils, hell, and all the enemies of our salvation; and by the power of his godhead is able to merit pardon of sin, the favour of God, the heavenly inheritance, and all the glory of the other world; for this dignity of his person addeth virtue and efficacy to his death and sufferings, in that he that suffered and died was very God; therefore God is said to have 'purchased the church with his own blood,' Acts xx. 28. Christ having suffered in our nature, which he took upon him, that is, in his human soul and body, the wrath of God, the curse, and all the punishments which were due to our sins, hath paid the price of our redemption, pacified divine wrath, and satisfied divine justice, in the very same nature in which we have sinned and provoked the Holy One of Israel, so that now all believers may triumphingly say, 'There is no condemnation to us that are in Christ Jesus,' Rom. viii. 1. Christ having, in our nature, suffered the whole curse and punishment due to our sins, God cannot in justice but accept of his sufferings as a full and complete satisfaction for all our sins, 1 John i. 7, 9; so that now there remaineth no more curse or punishment properly so called for us to suffer, either in our souls or bodies, either in this life or in the life to come, but we are certainly and fully delivered from all; not only from the eternal curse, and all the punishments and torments of hell, but also from the curse and sting of bodily death, and from all afflictions as they are curses and punishments of sin, 1 Cor. xv. 55, 56. That Jesus, who is God-man, hath changed the nature of them to us, so that of bitter curses and heavy punishments, they are become fatherly chastisements, the fruits of divine love, and the promoters of the internal and eternal good of our souls, Heb. xii. 5-7, and Rev. iii. 19. Oh, how should these things strengthen our faith in dear Jesus, and work us to lean and stay our weary souls wholly and only upon him who is God-man, 'and who of God is made unto us wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption,' 1 Cor. i. 30. Among the evangelists we find that Christ had a threefold entertainment among the sons of men: some received him into house, not into heart, as Simon the Pharisee, who gave him no kiss nor water to his feet,

¹ 'Thirty masses.'—G.

² *Ad plenum*, saith Erasmus; *ad perfectum*, say others.

Luke vii. 44; some neither into heart nor house, as the graceless, swinish Gergesites, Mat. viii. 34, who had neither civility nor honesty; some both into house and heart, as Lazarus, Mary, Martha, &c., John xi. 16. Certainly that Jesus who is God-man deserves the best room in all our souls, and the uppermost seat in all our hearts. But,

2. Secondly, If Jesus Christ be God-man, very God and very man, then *what high cause have we to observe, admire, wonder, and even stand amazed at the transcendent love of Christ in becoming man!* Oh! the firstness, the freeness, the unchangeableness, the greatness, the matchlessness of Christ's love to fallen man in becoming man! Men many times shew their love to one another, by hanging up one another's pictures in their families; but, ah, what love did Christ shew when he took our nature upon him! Heb. ii. 16, 'For verily he took not on him the nature of angels, but he took on him the seed of Abraham;' *Ἐπιλαμβάνεται*, he assumed, apprehended, caught, laid hold on the seed of Abraham, as the angel did on Lot, Gen. xix. 16, as Christ did on Peter, Mat. xiv. 31, or as men do upon a thing they are glad they have got and are loath to let go again. O sirs! it is a main ground and pillar of our comfort and confidence, that Jesus Christ took our flesh; for if he had not took our flesh upon him, we could never have been saved by him. Christ took not a part, but the whole nature of man, that is, a true human soul and body, together with all the essential properties and faculties of both; that in man's nature he might die, and suffer the wrath of God, and whole curse due to our sins, which otherwise, being God only, he could never have done; and that he might satisfy divine justice for sin, in the same nature that had sinned, and indeed it was most meet and fit, that the mediator, who was to reconcile God and man, should partake in the natures of both parties to be reconciled, Heb. ii. 14. Oh, what matchless love was this, that made our dear Lord Jesus to lay by for a time all that 'glory that he had with the Father before the world was,' John xvii. 5, and to assume our nature, and to be 'found in fashion as a man,' Phil. ii. 8. To see the great God in the form of a servant, or hanging upon the cross, how wonderful and astonishing was it to all that believed him to be God-man! God 'manifested in our flesh' is an amazing mystery, 1 Tim. iii. 16, a mystery fit for the speculation of angels, 1 Pet. i. 11, that the eternal God should become the man Christ Jesus, 1 Tim. ii. 5; that a most glorious creator should become a poor creature; that the ancient of days, Dan. vii. 9, 13, 22, should become an infant of days, Mat. ii. 11; that the most high should stoop so low as to dwell in a body of flesh—is a glorious mystery, that transcends all human understanding. It would have seemed a high blasphemy for us to have thought of such a thing, or to have desired such a thing, or to have spoken of such a thing, if God, in his everlasting gospel, had not revealed such a thing to us. Among the Romish priests, friars, Jesuits, they count it a great demonstration of love, a high honour that is done to any of their orders, when any nobleman or great prince, who is weary of the world, and the world weary of him, comes among them, and takes any of their habits upon him, and lives and dies in their habits. Oh, what a demonstration of Christ's love is it! and what a mighty honour hath Jesus Christ put upon mankind, in that he took our nature

upon him, in that he lived in our nature and died in our nature; and rose in our nature, and ascended in our nature, and now sits at his Father's right hand in our nature! Acts i. 10, 11. Though Jacob's love to Rachel, and Jonathan's love to David, and David's love to Absalom, and the primitive Christians' love to one another was strong, very strong; yet Christ's love in taking our human nature upon him does infinitely transcend all their loves. I think, saith one speaking of Christ,¹ he 'cannot despise me, who is bone of my bone, and flesh of my flesh; for if he neglect me as a brother, yet he will love me as a husband; that is my comfort.' 'O my Saviour,' saith one, [Jerome,] 'didst thou die for love for me? a love more dolorous than death, but to me a death more lovely than love itself; I cannot live, love, and be longer from thee.' I read in Josephus,² that when Herod Antipater was accused to Julius (?) Cæsar as no good friend of his, he made no other apology, but stripping himself stark naked, shewed Cæsar his wounds and said, let me hold my tongue, these wounds will speak for me how I have loved Cæsar. Ah, my friends, Christ's wounds in our nature speak out the admirable love of Jesus Christ to us; and oh, how should this love of his draw out our love to Christ, and inflame our love to that Jesus who is God-man blessed for ever. Mr Welch, a Suffolkshire minister, weeping at table, being asked the reason, said, it was because he could love Christ no more.³ Ah, what reason have we to weep, and weep again and again, that we can love that Jesus no more, who hath shewed such unparalleled love to us in assuming of the human nature! *Et ipsam animam odio haberem, si non diligeret meum Jesum*, I must hate my very soul, if it should not love my Jesus, saith Bernard. Ah, what cause have we even to hate ourselves, because we love that dear Jesus no more, who is very God and very man. But,

3. Thirdly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Then *we may very safely and roundly assert that the work of redemption was a very great work*.⁴ The redemption of souls is a mighty work, a costly work. To redeem poor souls from sin, from wrath, from the power of Satan, from the curse, from hell, from the condemnation, was a mighty work. Wherefore was Christ born, wherefore did he live, sweat, groan, bleed, die, rise, ascend? Was it not to bring 'deliverance to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound'? Was it not to 'make an end of sin, to finish transgression, and to bring in everlasting righteousness,' and 'to destroy the works of the devil,' and to 'abolish death,' and to 'bring life and immortality to light,' and to 'redeem us from all iniquity, and to purify us to himself, and to make us a peculiar people, zealous of good works'? Certainly the work of redemption was no ordinary or common thing; God-man must engage in it, or poor fallen man is undone for ever. The greater the person is that is engaged in any work, the greater is that work. The great monarchs of the world do not use to engage their sons in poor, low, mean, and

¹ Bernard sup. Cant. ser. 20. ² Jos. Bel. Jud. l. 1, c. 8. ³ As before, 'Welsh.'—G.

⁴ Consult these scriptures, Isa. lxi. 1; Dan. ix. 24; 1 John iii. 8; Luke i. 74, 75; Tit. ii. 14; 1 Pet. i. 4.

petty services, but in such services as are high and honourable, noble and weighty; and will you imagine that ever the great and glorious God would have sent his Son, his own Son, his only-begotten Son, his bosom Son, his Son in whom his soul delighted before the foundations of the earth was laid, to redeem poor sinners' souls, if this had not been a great work, a high work, and a most glorious work in his eye? John i. 18, and Prov. viii. 22-33. The creation of the world did but cost God a word of his mouth, 'Let there be light, and there was light,' Gen. i. 3; but the redemption of souls cost him his dearest Son. There is a divine greatness stamped upon the works of providence, but what are the works of providence to the work of redemption? What are all providential works to Christ's coming from heaven, to his being incarnate, to his doings, sufferings, and dying; and all this to ransom poor souls from the curse, hell, wrath, and eternal death? Souls are dear and costly things, and of great price in the sight of God. Amongst the Romans, those their proper goods and estates which men had gotten in the wars with hazard of their lives, were called *Peculium Castrense*, of a field purchase. Oh, how much more may the precious and immortal souls of men be called Christ's *Peculium Castrense*, his purchase, gotten, not only by the jeopardy of his life, but with the loss of his life and blood! 'Ye know,' saith the apostle, 'that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as with silver and gold, from your vain conversation, received by tradition, but with the precious blood of the Son of God, as of a lamb without a spot,' 1 Pet. i. 18, 19. Christ, that only went to the price of souls, hath told us that one soul is more worth than all the world, Mat. xvi. 26. Christ left his Father's bosom, and all the glory of heaven, for the good of souls; he assumed the nature of man for the happiness of the soul of man; he trod the wine-press of his Father's wrath for souls; he wept for souls, he sweat for souls, he prayed for souls, he paid for souls, and he bled out his heart blood for the redemption of souls. The soul is the breath of God, the beauty of man, the wonder of angels, and the envy of devils. It is of an angelical nature, it is a heavenly spark, a celestial plant, and of a divine offspring. It is capable of the knowledge of God, of union with God, of communion with God, and of an eternal fruition of God, John xiv. 8, and Ps. xvii. 15. There is nothing that can suit the soul below God, there is nothing that can satisfy the soul without God. The soul is so high and so noble a piece that it scorns all the world. What are all the riches of the East or West Indies, what are rocks of diamonds, or mountains of gold, or the price of Cleopatra's draught, to the price that Christ laid down for souls? It is only the blood of him that is God-man that is an equivalent price for the redemption of souls. Silver and gold hath redeemed many thousands out of Turkish bondage, but all the silver and gold in the world could never redeem one poor soul from hellish bondage, from hellish torments. Souls are a dear commodity. He that bought them found them so; and yet at how cheap a rate do some sinners sell their immortal souls! Callenuccus tells us of a nobleman of Naples that was wont profanely to say that he had two souls in his body, one for God, and another for who-

soever would buy it;¹ but if he hath one soul in hell, I believe he will never find another for heaven. A person of quality, who is still alive, told me a few years since, that in discourse with one of his servants he asked him what he thought would become of his soul if he lived and died in his ignorance and enmity against God, &c. He most profanely and atheistically answered that when he died, he would hang his soul on a hedge, and say, Run God, run devil, and he that can run fastest let him take my soul.² I have read³ of a most blasphemous wretch that, on a time being with his companions in a common inn, carousing and making merry, asked them if they thought a man had a soul or no; whereunto when they replied that the souls of men are immortal, and that some of them after death lived in hell and others in heaven—for so the writings of the prophets and apostles instructed them—he answered and swore that he thought it nothing so, but rather that there was no soul in man to survive the body, but that heaven and hell were mere fables and inventions of priests to get gain; and for himself, he was ready to sell his soul to any that would buy it. Then one of his companions took up a cup of wine, and said, sell me thy soul for this cup of wine; which he receiving, bade him take his soul, and drank up the wine. Now Satan himself being there in man's shape, bought it again of the other at the same price, and by and by bade him give him his soul, the whole company affirming it was meet he should have it, since he had bought it, not perceiving the devil; but presently, he laying hold of this soul-seller, carried him into the air before them all, to the great astonishment and amazement of the beholders; and from that day to this he was never heard of, but hath now found by experience that men have souls, and that hell is no fable!⁴ Ah, for what a thing of nought do many thousands sell their souls to Satan every day! How many thousands are there who swear, curse, lie, cheat, deceive, &c., for a little gain every day! I have read that there was a time when the Romans did wear jewels on their shoes. Oh that in these days men did not worse! Oh that they did not trample under feet that matchless jewel, their precious and immortal souls! O sirs, there is nothing below heaven so precious and noble as your souls, and therefore do not play the courtiers with your poor souls. Now the courtier does all things late. He rises late, and dines late, and sups late, and goes to bed late, and repents late. Christ made himself an offering for sin, that souls might not be undone by sin; the Lord died that slaves might live; the Son dies that servants might live; the natural Son dies that adopted sons may live; the only-begotten Son dies that bastards might live; yea, the judge dies that malefactors may live. Ah, friends, as there was never sorrow like Christ's, so there was never love like Christ's love; and of all his love, none to that of soul love. Christ, who is God-man, did

¹ As before.—G.

² This pious gentleman was with me in May 1673, at my house.

³ Discipulus de temp. Serm., 132.

⁴ We laugh at little children to see them part with rich jewels for silly trifles, and yet daily experience tells us that multitudes are so childish as to part with such rich and precious jewels as their immortal souls for a lust, or for base and unworthy trifles; of whom it may be truly said, as Augustus Cæsar said in another case, they are like a man that fishes with a golden hook; the gain can never recompense the loss that may be sustained.

take upon him thy nature, and bare thy sins, and suffered death, and encountered the cross, and was made a sacrifice and a curse, and all to bring about thy redemption; and therefore thou mayest safely conclude that the work of redemption is a great work. But,

4. Fourthly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Then *let this encourage poor sinners to come to Christ, to close with Christ, to accept of Christ, to match with Christ, and to enter into a marriage union and communion with Christ.* The great work of gospel ministers is like that of Eliezer, Abraham's servant, to seek a match for our Master's Son. Now our way to win you to him, is not only to tell you what he has, but what he is. Now he is 'God-man in one person.' He is man, that you may not be afraid of him; and he is God, that he may be able to save you to the uttermost; he is 'the Prince of the kings of the earth;' he is 'Lord of lords and King of kings;' he is the 'Heir of all things;' he is 'fairer than the children of men;' he is 'the chiefest of ten thousand;' he is 'altogether lovely.'¹ There is everything in Jesus, who is God-man, to encourage you to come to him. If you look upon his names, if you look upon his natures, if you look upon his offices, if you look upon his dignities, if you look upon his personal excellencies, if you look upon his mighty conquests, if you look upon his royal attendance,—all these things call aloud upon you to come to Christ, to close with Christ. If you look upon the great things that he has done for sinners, and the hard things that he has suffered for sinners, and the glorious things that he has prepared and laid up for sinners, how can you but readily accept of him, and sweetly embrace him? Though thou hast no loveliness nor comeliness, no beauty nor glory, Ezek. xvi. 4, 5, and Isa. lv. 1, 2; though thou hast not one penny in thy purse, nor a rag to hang on thy back, yet if thou art but really and heartily willing to be divorced from all thy sinful lovers, and accept of Christ for thy sovereign Lord, he is willing that the match should be made up between thee and him, Hos. iii. 3, and Rev. xxii. 17. Now shall Christ woo you himself, shall he declare his willingness to take you with nothing, shall he engage himself to protect you, to maintain you, and at last, as a dowry, to bestow heaven upon you, and will you refuse him, will you turn your backs upon him? O sirs! what could Christ have done that he has not done to do you good, and to make you happy for ever? Lo! he has laid aside his glorious robes, and he has put on your rags; he has clothed himself with your flesh; he came off from his royal throne, he humbled himself to the death of the cross, and has brought life, immortality, and glory to your very doors; and will you yet stand out against him? Oh, 'how shall such escape who neglect so great salvation,' Heb. ii. 3; who say, 'This man shall not rule over us,' Luke xix. 14; who 'tread under foot the Son of God'? Heb. x. 28. Oh, what wrath, what great wrath, what pure wrath, what infinite wrath, what everlasting wrath, is reserved for such persons! John iii. 36. Doubtless, Turks, Jews, and Pagans will have a cooler and a lighter hell than the despisers and rejecters of Christ, John v. 40, and Mat. xxiii. 13, 14. The great damnation is for those that might have

¹ Heb. vii. 25; Rev. i. 5, and xvii. 14; Heb. i. 3; Ps. xlv. 1; Cant. v. 10, 16.

Christ, but would not. And no wonder! for the sin of rejecting Christ is not chargeable upon the devils. Ah sinners, sinners! that you would labour to understand more, and dwell more upon, the pre-eminent excellencies of Christ! for till the soul can discern a better, a greater excellency in Christ than in any other thing, it will never yield to match with Christ. Oh, labour every day more and more to take the height and depth and breadth of the excellency of Christ. He is the chiefest and the choicest of all, both in that upper and in this lower world. The godhead dwells bodily in him; he is full of grace; he is the heir of glory; the holy one of God; the brightness of his Father's image; the fountain of life, the well of salvation, and the wonder of heaven. Oh, when will you so understand the superlative excellency of Christ as to fall in love with him, as to cry out with the martyr, 'Oh, none but Christ; oh, none to Christ!' ¹ It is your wisdom, it is your duty, it is your safety, it is your glory, it is your salvation, it is your all to accept of Christ, to close with Christ, and to bestow yourselves, your souls, your all on Christ. If you embrace him, you are made for ever; but if you reject him, you perish for ever. Bernard calls Christ, *Sponsus sanguinum*, the Bridegroom of Bloods, because he espoused his church to himself upon the bed of his cross, his head begirt with a pillow of thorns, his body drenched in a bath of his own blood. To turn your backs upon this bridegroom of bloods will certainly cost you the blood of your souls; and therefore look to it. But,

5. Fifthly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Oh, then, *honour him above all*. Oh, let him have the pre-eminence, exalt him as high as God the Father hath exalted him. It is the absolute will of the Father that 'all should honour his Son, even as they honour himself:' ² for he having the same nature and essence with the Father, the Father will have him have the same honour which he himself hath; which whosoever denies to him reflects dishonour upon the Father, who will not bear anything derogatory to the glory of his Son. Certainly there is due to Christ, as he is God-man, the highest respect, reverence, and veneration, which angels and men can possibly give unto him. Oh, look upon the Lord Jesus as God; and according to that honour that is due to him as God, so must you honour him. The apostle speaks of some who, 'when they knew God, they did not glorify him as God,' Rom. i. 21; so several pretend to give some glory to Christ, but they do not glorify him as God. O sirs, this is that which you must come up to, viz., to honour Christ in such a manner as may be suitable to his natures, and as he is the infinite, blessed, and eternal God; and ah! what honour can be high enough for such a person? Christ's honour was very dear to him, who said, Lord, use me for thy shield to keep off those wounds of dishonour, which else would fall on thee, [Bernard.] Luther, in an epistle to Spalatinus, saith, 'They call me a devil, but be it so, so long as Christ is magnified, I am well a-payed.' The inanimate creatures are so compliant with his pleasure, that they will thwart their own

¹ Lambert, as before.—G.

² Col. i. 18; Phil. ii. 6–10; John v. 23. This text looks sourly on Jews, Turks, Papists, Socinians, and others.

nature to serve his honour; fire will descend, as on Sodom and Gomorrah, Gen. xix.; and water, though a fluid body, stand up like a solid wall, as in the Red Sea, Exod. xiv. 22; if he do but speak the word. Oh, let not the inanimate creatures one day rise in judgment against us for not giving Christ his due honour. If we honour Christ we shall have honour, that is a bargain of Christ's own making; but if we dishonour him, he will put dishonour upon us, as Scripture and history in all ages do sufficiently evidence, 1 Sam. ii. 30. In history we read of an impostor that gave it out that he was that star which Balaam prophesied of, which was a prophecy of Christ, Num. xxiv. 17; this fellow called himself *Ben-chomar*, the son of a star. This man professed himself to be Christ, but he was slain with thunder and lightning from heaven, and then the Jews called him *Ben-cosmar*, which signifieth the son of a lie.¹ Learned Buxtorf tells us that the Jews call Christ *Bar-chozabb*, the son of a lie, a bastard; and his gospel *Aven-gelaion*, the volume of lies, or the volume of iniquity; and hath not God been a-revenging this upon them for above this sixteen hundred years? Rabbi Samuel, who long since writ a tract in form of an epistle to Rabbi Isaac, master of the synagogue of the Jews; wherein he doth excellently discuss the cause of their long captivity and extreme misery, and after that he had proved it was inflicted for some grievous sin, he sheweth that sin to be the same which Amos speaks of. 'For three transgressions of Israel, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because they sold the righteous for silver, and the poor for a pair of shoes,' Amos ii. 6. The selling of Joseph he makes the first sin, the worshipping the calf in Horeb the second sin, the abusing and killing God's prophets the third sin, and the selling of Jesus Christ the fourth sin. For the first they served four hundred years in Egypt, for the second they wandered forty years in the wilderness, for the third they were captives seventy years in Babylon, and for the fourth they are held in pitiful captivity, even to this very day. Oh, how severely has God revenged the wrongs and indignities done to Christ the Lord, by this miserable people, to this very hour! and yet, oh, the several ways, wherein this poor people do every day express their malice and hatred against the Lord Jesus! Oh, pray, pray hard, that the veil may be taken away that has been so long before their eyes. Herod imprisons Peter, and killeth James with the sword, Acts xii. 1-4; this God puts up, but when he comes to usurp the honour due to Christ, he must die for it, ver. 23. Herod might more safely take away the liberty of one, and the life of another, than the glory due to Christ. Long before his death, being in chains, he met with a strange omen; for, as he stood bound before the palace, leaning dejectedly upon a tree, among many others that were prisoners with him, an owl came and sat down in that tree to which he leaned; which a German seeing, being one of those that stood there bound, he asked who he was that was in the purple, and leaned there; and understanding who he was, he told him of his enlargement, promotion to honour, and prosperity; and that when he should see that bird again he should die within five days after.² Now when Herod

¹ Synag. Judaica, cap. 5 and 36.

² Josephus of the Antiquities of the Jews, lib. xviii. pp. 475, 476, and 510, 511. [More

had imprisoned Peter, and slain James with the sword, he went down to Cæsarea, and there he made sports and shows in honour of Cæsar; and, on the second day, being most gorgeously apparelled, and the sun shining very bright upon his robe of silver, his flatterers saluted him for a god, and cried out to him, 'Be merciful unto us! hitherto have we feared thee as a man, but, henceforward, we will acknowledge thee to be of a nature more excellent than mortal frailty can attain to.' The wretched king reprov'd not this abominable flattery, but was well pleased with it; and, not long after, he espied the owl which the German had foretold to be the omen of his death. And suddenly he was seized with miserable gripings in his belly, which came upon him with vehement extremity; whereupon, turning himself towards his friends, saith, Lo, he whom you esteem for a god is doomed to die, and destiny shall evidently confute you, in those flattering and false speeches which you lately used concerning me; for I, who have been adored by you as one immortal, am now under the hands of death; and his griefs and torments increasing, his death drew on apace; whereupon he was removed into the palace, and all the people put on sackcloth, and lay on the ground, praying for him; which he, beholding, could not refrain from tears; and so after five days he gave up the ghost.¹ Thus you see how dearly they have paid for it that have not given Christ his due glory; and let these instances of his wrath alarm all your hearts so, that we may make more conscience than ever, of setting the crown of honour only upon Christ's head, 'for he only is worthy of all honour, glory, and praise,' Rev. xiv. 10, 11. But,

6. Sixthly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Then *from hence as in a glass you may see the true reasons why the death and sufferings of Christ, though short, very short, yet have a sufficient power and virtue in them to satisfy God's justice, to pacify his wrath, to procure our pardon, and to save our immortal souls—viz., because of the dignity of his person that died and suffered for us, the Son of God, yea, God himself.* There was an infinite virtue and value in all his sufferings; hence his blood is called 'precious blood,' yea, 'the blood of God.'² Did man transgress the royal law of God? behold God himself is become a man to make up that breach, and to satisfy divine justice to the uttermost farthing, Rom. viii. 2-4. For the man Christ Jesus to stand before the bar of the law, and to make full and complete reparation to it, was the highest honour that ever was done to the law of God. This is infinitely more pleasing and delightful to divine justice than if all the curses of the law had been poured out upon fallen man, and than if the law had built up its honour upon the destruction of the whole creation. To see one sun clouded is much more than to see the moon and all the stars in heaven overcast. Christ considered as God-man was great, very great; and the greater his person was, the greater were his sorrows, his sufferings, his humiliation, his compassion, his satisfaction to divine justice. Had

accurately xix. 8, 2: cf. 2 Mac. ix. 9, and Jortin, Eccles. Hist. ii. 320, with a note of Gibbon, c. xiv.: Tertullian ad Scap. c. iii., §. 20. Michaëlis i. 65.—G.]

¹ All as quaintly told by Clarke in his 'Life' of Herod.—G.

² Heb. ix. 14; 1 Pet. i. 19; Acts xx. 28; Gal. iv. 4-6.

not Christ been God-man, he could never have been an able surety, Heb. vii. 25—he could never have paid our debts, he could never have satisfied divine justice, he could never have brought in an everlasting righteousness, Dan. ix. 24, he could never have ‘spoiled principalities and powers, and made a show of them openly, triumphing over them on the cross,’ Col. ii. 15—a plain allusion to the Roman triumphs, where the victor ascending up to the capitol in a chariot of state, all the prisoners following him on foot with their hands bound behind them, and the victor commonly threw certain pieces of coin abroad to be picked up by the common people. So Christ, in the day of his solemn inauguration into his heavenly kingdom, triumphed over sin, death, devils, and hell, ‘and gave gifts to men.’ And had he not been God-man, he could never have merited for us a glorious reward. If we consider Christ himself as a mere man, setting aside his godhead, Eph. iv. 8, he could not merit by his sufferings; for, 1. Christ as he was man only, was a creature. Now a mere creature can merit nothing from the Creator. 2. Christ’s sufferings, as he was man only, were finite, and therefore could not merit infinite glory. Indeed, as he was God, his sufferings were meritorious; but, consider him purely as man, they were not. This is wisely to be observed against the papists, who make so great a noise of men’s merits; for if Christ’s sufferings, as he was mere man, could not merit the least favour from God, then what mortal man is able to merit, at the hand of God, the least of mercies by his greatest sufferings? But,

7. Seventhly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Then from hence *we may see the greatest pattern of humility and self-denial that ever was or will be in this world.* That he who was the Lord of glory, that he who was equal with God, that he should leave the bosom of his Father, Phil. ii. 6; John i. 18, which was a bosom of the sweetest loves and the most ineffable delights, that he should put off all that glory that he had with the Father before the foundation of the world was laid, John xvii. 5, that he should so far abase himself as to become man, by taking on him our base, vile nature, so that in this our nature he might die, suffer, satisfy, and bring many sons to glory, Heb. ii. 10,—oh, here is the greatest humility and abasement that ever was! And oh that all sincere Christians would endeavour to imitate this matchless example of humility and self-denial! Oh the admirable condescensions of dear Jesus, that he should take our nature, and make us partakers of his divine nature! 2 Pet. i. 4, that he should put on our rags, and put upon us his royal robes! Rev. xix. 7, 8, that he should make himself poor that we might be rich! 2 Cor. viii. 9, low that we might be high! accursed that we might be blessed! Gal. iii. 10, 13. Oh wonderful love! oh grace unsearchable! Ah, Christians, did Christ stoop low, and will you be stout, proud, and high? Was he content to be accounted a worm, a wine-bibber, an enemy to Cæsar, a friend of publicans and sinners, a devil, and must you be all in a flame when vain men make little account of you? Was he willing to be a curse, a reproach for you, and will you shrug, and shrink, and faint, and fret when you are reproached for his name? Did Jesus Christ stoop so low as to wash his disciples’ feet, John xiii. 14, and are you so stout

and sturdy that you cannot hear together, nor pray together, nor sit at the table of the Lord together, though you all hope at last to sit down with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven? Mat. viii. 11. Shall one heaven hold you at last; and shall not one house, one bed, one table, one church, hold you here? Oh, that ever worms should swell with such intolerable pride and stoutness! He who was God-man, was lowly, meek, self-denying, and of a most condescending spirit; and oh that all you, who hope for salvation by him, would labour to write after so fair a copy. Bernard calls humility a self-annihilation. The same author saith that humility is *conservatrix virtutum*. 'Thou wilt save the humble,' saith Job, chap. xxii. 29; in the Hebrew it is, 'him that is of low eyes,' רשע עינים. A humble Christian hath lower thoughts of himself than others can have of him. Abraham is 'dust and ashes' in his own eyes, Gen. xviii., Jacob is 'less than the least of all mercies,' Gen. xxxii. 10; David, though a great king, yet looks upon himself as a worm; 'I am a worm, and no man,' Ps. xxii. 6. The word in the original, *Tolugnath*, signifieth a very little worm, which breedeth in scarlet; a worm that is so little, that a man can hardly see it or perceive it. Oh, how little, how very little was David in his own eyes; and Paul, who was the greatest among the apostles, yet, in his own eyes, he was 'less than the least of all saints.'¹ *Non sum dignus dici minimus*, saith Ignatius, 'I am not worthy to be called the least.' 'Lord! I am hell, but thou art heaven,' said blessed Cooper: 'I am a most hypocritical wretch, not worthy that the earth should bear me,' said holy Bradford: Luther, in humility, speaks thus of himself; 'I have no other name than sinner; sinner is my name, sinner is my surname; this is the name by which I shall be always known; I have sinned, I do sin, I shall sin, *in infinitum*.' Ah, how can proud, stout spirits read these instances and not blush! Certainly the sincere humble Christian is like the violet, which grows low, hangs the head down, and hides itself with its own leaves; and were it not that the frequent smell of his many virtues discovers him to the world, he would choose to live and die in his self-contenting secrecy. But,

8. Eighthly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Then hence we may see *how to have access to God; namely, by means of Christ's human nature, which he hath taken upon him, to that very end, that he might in it die and suffer for our sins, and so reconcile us to God, and give us access to him*, Rom. v. 1, 2; Eph. iii. 12, and ii. 18. 'By him we have access to the Father.' The word is *προσαγωγήν*, 'a leading by the hand,' an introduction, an adduction: it is an allusion, saith Estius, to the customs of princes, to whom there is no passage, unless we are brought in by one of their favourites, Esth. i. Though the Persian kings held it a piece of their silly glory to hold off their best friends, who might not come near them, but upon special licence; yet the great King of heaven and earth counts it his glory to give us free access at all times, in all places, and upon all occasions, by the man Christ Jesus: 1 Tim. ii. 5, 'There is one mediator between God and us, even the man Christ

¹ Eph. iii. 8. See my 'Unsearchable Riches of Christ' upon that text. [Vol. iii. pp. 1-232.—G.]

Jesus.' Christ was made true man, that in our nature he might reconcile us to God, and give us access to God, which he could never have done, had he not been very God and very man. Without the human nature of Christ, we could never have had access to God, or fellowship with God; being by nature enemies to God, and estranged from God, and dead in trespasses and sins, Rom. v. 10, it is only by the mediation of Christ incarnate that we come to be reconciled to God, Eph. ii. 1, 12-14, to have access to him, and acceptance with him. In Christ's human nature God and we meet together, and have fellowship together, 1 John i. 1-3. It could never stand with the unspotted holiness and justice of God, who is 'a consuming fire,' Heb. xii. 29, to honour us with one cast of his countenance, or one hour's communion with himself, were it not upon the account of the man Christ Jesus. The least serious thought of God out of Christ will breed nothing in the soul but horror and amazement; which made Luther say, *Nolo Deum absolutum*, let me have nothing to do with an absolute God. Believers have free and blessed access to God, but still it is upon the credit of the man Christ Jesus, Heb. iv. 15, 16. 'Let us come boldly to the throne of grace,' saith the apostle, speaking of Christ, 'that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.' The apostle's phrase is *μετὰ παρρησίας*, a word which signifies liberty of speech, and boldness of face; as when a man with a bold and undaunted spirit, utters his mind before the great ones of the world without blushing, without weakness of heart, without shaking of his voice, without imperfection and faltering in speech, when neither majesty nor authority can take off his courage, so as to stop his mouth, and make him afraid to speak. With such heroic and undaunted spirits would the apostle have us to come to the throne of grace; and all upon the credit of Christ our high priest, who is God-man. But,

9. Ninthly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Then *you may be very confident of his sympathising with you in all your afflictions*, Ezek. xxxv. 10-13; Isa. xxxvii. 23, 24; *then this may serve as a foundation to support you under all your troubles, and as a cordial to comfort you under all your afflictions, in that Christ partaking of the same nature, and having had experience of the infirmities of it, he is the more able and willing to help and succour us* Heb. ii. 17, 'Wherefore in all things it becometh him to be like his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people:' so Heb. iv. 15. If one come to visit a man that is sick of a grievous disease, who hath himself been formerly troubled with the same disease, he will sympathise more, and shew more compassion than twenty others, who have not felt the like:¹ so here, from Christ's sufferings in his human nature we may safely gather that he will shew himself a merciful high priest to us in our sufferings, and one that will be ready to help and succour us in all our afflictions and miseries, which we suffer in this life, inasmuch as himself had experience of suffering the like in our nature; 'for in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted:' and this

¹ As the brazen serpent was like the fiery serpent, but had no sting.

should be a staff to support us, and a cordial to comfort us in all our sorrows and miseries. It is between Christ and his church as it is between two lute strings that are tuned one to another; no sooner is one struck but the other trembles:¹ Isa. lxiii. 9, 'In all their afflictions he was afflicted.' These words may be read interrogatively thus: was he in all their afflictions afflicted? Christ took to heart the afflictions of his church, he was himself grieved for them and with them. The Lord, the better to allure and draw his people to himself, speaks after the manner of men, attributing to himself all the affection, love, and fatherly compassion that can possibly be in them to men in misery. Christ did so sympathise with his people in all their afflictions and sufferings, as if he himself had felt the weight, the smart, the pain of them all. 'He was in all things made like unto his brethren,' not only in nature, but also in infirmities and sufferings, and by all manner of temptations, that thereby 'he might be able,' experimentally, 'to succour them that are tempted.' He that toucheth them toucheth not only his eye but the apple of his eye, which is the tenderest piece of the tenderest part,² to express the inexpressible tenderness of Christ's compassion towards them. Let persecutors take heed how they meddle with God's eyes, for he will retaliate eye for eye, Exod. xxi. 24: he is wise in heart and mighty in strength, and sinners shall one day pay dear for touching the apple of his eye. Christ counts himself persecuted when his church is persecuted; 'Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?' Acts ix. 4. And he looks upon himself as hungry, thirsty, naked, and in prison, when his members are so, Mat. xxv. 35, 36; so greatly does he sympathise with them. Hence the afflictions of Christians are called *ὁστέριματα*, 'the remainders of the afflictions of Christ,' Col. i. 24: such as Christ, by his fellow-feeling, suffereth in his members, and as they by correspondency are to fill up, as exercises and trials of their faith and patience. Christ gave many evidences of his sympathy or fellow-feeling of our infirmities when he was on earth, as he groaned in his spirit and was troubled, John xi. 33: when he saw those that wept for Lazarus he wept also, ver. 35; as he did over Jerusalem also, Luke xix. 41. It is often observed in the Gospel that Christ was moved with compassion: and that he frequently put forth acts of pity, mercy, and succour to those that were in any distress, either in body or soul. Christ retaineth this sympathy and fellow-feeling with us now he is in heaven: and does so far commiserate our distresses as may stand with a glorified condition. Jesus Christ grieves for the afflictions of his people; 'the angel of the Lord answered and said, O Lord of hosts, how long wilt thou not have mercy on Jerusalem,' Zech. i. 12. The angel here is that Jesus who is our advocate with the Father, 1 John ii. 1, 2. He speaks as one intimately affected with the state and condition of poor Jerusalem. Christ plays the advocate for his suffering people, and feelingly pleads for them; he being afflicted in all their afflictions, it moved him to observe that God's enemies were in a better case than his people: and this put him upon that passionate

¹ If we perish, Christ perisheth with us.—*Luther*.

² Zech. ii. 8, *Ishon* of *Ish*, it is here called *Bath*, the daughter of the eye, because it is as dear to a man as his only daughter.

expostulation, 'O Lord of hosts, how long wilt thou not have mercy on Jerusalem!' Alexander the Great applied his crown to the soldier's forehead that had received a wound for him; and Constantine the Great kissed the hollow of Paphnutius's eye that he had lost for Christ. What an honour was it to the soldier and to Paphnutius that these great men should have fellow-feeling of their sufferings, and sympathise with them in their sorrows! but, oh then! what an honour is it to such poor worms as we are, that Jesus Christ, who is God-man, who is the Prince of the kings of the earth, that he should have a fellow-feeling of all our miseries, and sympathise with us in all our troubles! Rev. i. 5. But,

10. Tenthly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Then from hence you may see *the excellency of Christ above man, above all other men, yea, above Adam in innocency*. Christ, as man, was perfect in all graces: Isa. xi. 1, 2, 'And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a branch shall grow out of his roots; and the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, the Spirit of wisdom and understanding, the Spirit of counsel and might, the Spirit of knowledge, and of the fear of the Lord.' God gave the Spirit of wisdom to him not by measure; and therefore, at twelve years of age, you find him in the Sanhedrim disputing with the doctors, and asking them questions, John iii. 34; Luke ii. 46, 47; John i. 16, 'And of his fulness have all we received grace for grace;' Col. i. 19, 'For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell;' ii. 3, 'In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.' The state of innocency was an excellent estate, it was an estate of perfect holiness and righteousness, Gen. i. 27. By his holiness he was carried out to know the Lord, to love the Lord, to delight in the Lord, to fear the Lord, and to take him as his chiefest good, Eph. iv. 22-24. A legal holiness consists in an exact, perfect, and complete conformity in heart and life to the whole revealed will of God; and this was the holiness that Adam had in his innocency, and this holiness was immediately derived from God, and was perfect. Adam's holiness was as co-natural to him as unholiness is now to us. Adam's holiness was as natural, and as pleasing, and as delightful to him as any way of unholiness can be natural, pleasing, and delightful to us. The estate of innocency was an estate of perfect wisdom, knowledge, and understanding. Witness the names that Adam gave to all the creatures, suitable and apposite to their natures, Gen. ii. 20. The estate of innocency was an estate of great honour and dignity. David brings in Adam in his innocent estate with a crown upon his head, and that crown was a crown of glory and honour: 'Thou hast crowned him with glory and honour,' his place was 'a little lower than the angels,' but far above all other creatures, Ps. viii. 5. The estate of innocency, it was an estate of great dominion and authority, man being made the sovereign lord of the whole creation, Ps. viii. 6-8. We need not stand to enlarge upon one parcel of his demesnes, namely, that which they call paradise, sith the whole both of sea and land, and all the creatures in both, were his possession, his paradise. Certainly man's first estate was a state of perfect and complete happiness, there being nothing within him but what was desirable, nothing without him but what was

amiable, and nothing about him but what was serviceable and comfortable; and yet Jesus Christ, who is God-man, is infinitely more glorious and excellent than ever Adam was; for Adam was set in a mutable condition, but Christ is the Rock of ages. He is steadfast and abiding for ever; he is 'yesterday, and to-day, and the same for ever,' Heb. xiii. 8. He is the same afore time, in time, and after time; he is the same, that is unchangeable, in his essence, promises, and doctrine. Christ is the same in respect of virtue, and the faith of believers; even his manhood, before it was in being, was clothed with perfection of grace, and so continueth for ever. And again, Adam was a mere man, and alone by himself; but in Christ the human nature was hypostatically united unto the divine; and hence it comes to pass that Christ, even as man, had a greater measure of knowledge and revelation of grace and heavenly gifts than ever Adam had. The apostle tells us that in 'Christ dwells all the fulness of the Godhead,' *σωματικῶς*, bodily, that is, essentially; that is, not by a naked and bare communicating of virtue, as God is said to dwell in his saints, but by a substantial union of the two natures, divine and human, the eternal Word and the man, consisting of soul and body, whereby they become one, *ὑφιστάμενον*, one person, one subsistence. Now from this admirable and wonderful union of the two natures in Christ, there flows to the manhood of Christ a plenitude and fulness of all spiritual wisdom and grace, such as was never found in any mere man, no, not in Adam whilst he stood in his integrity and uprightness. But,

11. Eleventhly, Is Jesus Christ God-man? is he very God and very man? Then *this truth looks very sourly and frowningly upon all such as deny the godhead of Christ*; as Arians, Turks, Jews. How many be there in this city, in this nation, who stiffly deny the divinity of Christ, and dispute against it, and write against it, and blaspheme that great truth, without which, I think, a man may safely say, there is no possibility of salvation. In ancient times, near unto the age of the apostles, this doctrine of Christ's godhead, and eternal generation from the Father, was greatly opposed by sundry wicked and blasphemous heretics, as Ebion, Cerinthus, Arius, &c., who stirred up great troubles, and bloody persecutions against the church, for maintaining this great truth of Christ's godhead. They asserted that Christ had no true flesh; it was only the likeness of flesh which he appeared in, and that his body was only a fantastic imaginary body; but had the body of Christ been only such a body, then his conception, nativity, death, resurrection, are all too but imaginary things; and then his sufferings and crucifixion are but mere fancies too; and if so, then what would become of us, what would become of our salvation? then our faith would be in vain, and our hope would be in vain, and our hearing, preaching, praying, and receiving, would all be in vain; yea, then all our religion would vanish into a mere fancy also. When a man's conscience is awakened to see his sin and misery, and he shall find guilt to lay like a load upon his soul, and when he shall see that divine justice is to be satisfied, and divine wrath to be pacified, and the curse to be borne, and the law to be fulfilled, and his nature to be renewed, his heart to be changed, and his sins to be pardoned, or

else his soul can never be saved: how can such a person venture his soul, his all, upon one that is but a mere creature? Certainly, a mere man is no rock, no city of refuge, and no sure foundation for a man to build his faith and hope upon. Woe to that man, that ever he was born, that has no Jesus, but a Socinian's Jesus to rest upon! Oh, it is sad trusting to one, who is man, but not God; flesh, but not spirit. As you love the eternal safety of your precious souls, and would be happy for ever; as you would escape hell, and get to heaven, lean on none, rest on none, but that Jesus who is God-man, who is very God and very man. Apollinaris held that Christ took not the whole nature of man, but a human body only, without a soul, and that the Godhead was instead of a soul to the manhood. Also Eutyches, who confounded the two natures of Christ, and their properties, &c. Also Apelles and the Manichees, who denied the true human body, and held him to have an aerial or imaginary body. Though the popular sort deified Alexander the Great;¹ yet, having got a clap with an arrow, he said, ye style me Jupiter's son, as if immortal; *sed hoc vulnus clamat esse hominem*; this blood that issues from the wound proves me in the issue a man: this is *αἷμα τοῦ ἀνθρώπου*, the blood of man, not of God, and smelling the stench of his own flesh, he asked his flatterers if the gods yielded such a scent. So may it be said of Jesus Christ our Saviour, though myriads of angels and saints acclaim he is a God, *ergo*, immortal; and a crew of heretics disclaim him to be man, as the Marcionites averred that he had a fantastical body, and Apelles who conceived that he had a sidereal substance, yet the streams of blood following the arrow of death that struck him, makes it good that he was perfect man; of a reasonable soul and human flesh subsisting. And as this truth looks sourly upon the above-mentioned persons, so it looks sourly upon the papists, who, by their doctrine of the real presence of Christ's body in the sacrament, do overthrow one of the properties of his human nature, which is to be but in one place present at once. This truth also looks sourly upon the Lutherans or Ubiquitaries, who teach that Christ's human nature is in all places by virtue of their personal union, &c. I wonder that of all the old errors, swept down into this latter age, as into a sink of time, this of the Socinians and Arians should be held forth among the rest. O sirs, beware of their doctrines, shun their meetings, and persons that come to you with the denial of the divinity of Christ in their mouths. This was John's doctrine and practice. Irenæus saith, that after he was returned from his banishment, and came to Ephesus, he came to bathe himself, and in the bath he found Cerinthus, that said, Christ had no being till he received it from the Virgin Mary; upon the sight of whom, John skipped out of the bath, and called his companions from thence; saying, let us go from this place, lest the bath should fall down upon us, because Cerinthus is in it, that is so great an enemy to God.² Ye see his doctrine, see his words too: 2 John 10, 11, 'If any come to you, having not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed: for he that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds.' What that doctrine was, if you cast your eye upon the scripture, you shall find it to be the doctrine of the divinity of Christ.

¹ Plutarch, *in vita*.² As before.—G.

Shew no love where you owe nothing but hatred: 'I hate every false way,' saith David, Ps. cxix. 118. And I shall look upon Auxentius as upon a devil, so long as he is an Arian, said Hilarius. We must shew no countenance, nor give no encouragement to such as deny either the divinity or humanity of Christ.

I have been the longer upon the divinity and humanity of Christ, 1. Because the times we live in require it. 2. That poor, weak, staggering Christians may be strengthened, established, and settled in the truth, as it is in Jesus. 3. That I may give in my testimony and witness against all those who are poisoned and corrupted with Socinian and Arian principles, which destroy the souls of men. 4. That those in whose hands this book may fall may be the better furnished to make head against men of corrupt minds; who, 'by sleight-of-hand and cunning craftiness, lie in wait to deceive,' Eph. iv. 14.

[6.] Sixthly, As he that did feel and suffer the very torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner, was God-man, so *the punishments that Christ did sustain for us must be referred only to the substance, and not unto the circumstances of punishment.* The punishment which Christ endured, if it be considered in its substance, kind, or nature, so it was the same with what the sinner himself should have undergone. Now the punishment due to the sinner was death, the curse of the law, &c. Now this Christ underwent, for 'he was made a curse for us,' Gal. iii. 13. But if you consider the punishment which Christ endured, with respect to certain circumstances, adjuncts, and accidents, as the eternity of it, desperation going along with it, &c., then, I say, it was not the same, but equivalent.¹ And the reason is, because, though the enduring of the punishments, as to the substance of them, could, and did agree with him as a surety, yet the circumstances of those punishments could not have befallen him unless he had been a sinner; and therefore every inordination in suffering was far from Christ, and a perpetual duration of suffering could not befall him, for the first of these had been contrary to the holiness and dignity of his person, and the other had made void the end of his suretyship and mediatorship, which was so to suffer, as yet to conquer and to deliver, and therefore, though he did suffer death for us in the substance of it, yet he neither did nor could suffer death in the circumstances of it, so as for ever to be held by death; for then, in suffering death, he should not have conquered death, nor delivered us from death. Neither was it necessary to Christ's substitution that he should undergo in every respect the same punishment which the offender himself was liable unto; but if he underwent so much punishment as did satisfy the law, and vindicate the lawgiver in his holiness, truth, justice, and righteousness, that was enough. Now that was unquestionably done by Christ, as the Scriptures do abundantly testify. It must be readily granted that Christ was to suffer the whole punishment due unto sin, so far as it became the dignity of his person and the necessity of the work; but if he had suffered eternally, the work of redemption could never have been accomplished; and besides, he should have suffered that which

¹ Whether the work of man's redemption could have been wrought without the sufferings and humiliation of Christ is not determinable by men; but that it was the most admirable way which wisdom, justice, and mercy could require, cannot be denied.

could noways beseech him. And therefore the apostle saith, Heb. ii. 10, 'It became him to be consecrated through sufferings.' Christ was only to pass through such sufferings as became him who was ordained to be the prince and captain of our salvation. It became him to be man, and it became him in our human nature to suffer death, and it became him to sustain for us the substance of those punishments that we should have undergone; and accordingly he did. What our sins did deserve, and what justice might lay upon us for those sins, all that did Christ certainly suffer or bear. Jesus Christ did so suffer for our sins, as that his sufferings were fully answerable to the demerit of our sins. And I think I may safely say that God, in justice, could not require any more, or lay on any one more punishment than Jesus Christ did suffer for our sins; and my reason is this, because Christ bare all our sins, and all our sorrows, and was obedient unto the death, and made a curse for us, Isa. liii., and Gal. iii. 13; and more than this the law of God could not require. And if Christ did suffer all that the law of God required, then certainly he suffered so much as did satisfy the justice of God, viz., as much punishment as was commensurated with sin. But,

[7.] Seventhly and lastly, *The meritorious cause, the main end, and the special occasion of all the sufferings of Christ were the sins of his people.*¹ Christ was our surety, and he could not satisfy for our sins, nor reconcile us to God without suffering: Isa. liii. 5, 'But he was wounded for our transgressions.' The Hebrew word for wounded, **נִחַל**, hath a double emphasis: either it may signify that he was pierced through as with a dart, or that he was tormented or pained, as women or other creatures are wont to be that bring forth with pain and torment, at the time of their travail; for the word in the text last cited comes regularly from a root that signifies properly to be in pain, as women are when they bring forth. It was our transgressions that gave Christ his deadly wounds; it was our sins that smote him, and bruised him. Look, as Zipporah said to Moses, Exod. iv. 25, 'Surely a bloody husband art thou to me,' so may Christ say to his church, Surely a bloody spouse hast thou been to me. Christ's spouse may look upon him and say, It was I that have been that Judas that have betrayed thee! It was I that was the soldiers that murdered thee! It was my sins that brought all sorrows and sufferings, all mischiefs and evils upon thee! I have sinned, and thou hast suffered! I have eaten the sour grapes, and thy teeth were set on edge! I have sinned, and thou hast died! I have wounded thee, and thou hast healed me! It is the wisdom, and oh that it might be more and more the work of every believer to look upon a humble Christ with a humble heart, a broken Christ with a broken heart, a bleeding Christ with a bleeding heart, a wounded Christ with a wounded heart; according to that, Zech. xii. 10, Christ was wounded, bruised, and cut off for sinners' sins. When Christ was taken by the soldiers, he said, 'If ye seek me, let these go their way:' Christ was willing that the hurt which sinners

¹ Isa. liii. 4, 5. There were other subordinate ends of his sufferings; as, (1.) To sanctify sufferings to us. (2.) To sweeten sufferings to us. (3.) To succour us experimentally under all our sufferings, Heb. ii. 17, 18. (4.) That he might be prepared to enter into his glory, Luke xxiv. 26. (5.) That he might be a conqueror over sufferings, which was one piece of his greatest glory, &c.

had done to God, and the debt which they owed to him, should be set upon his score, and put upon his account ; and the apostle mentions it as a remarkable thing, ' that Christ died for the ungodly,' Rom. v. 8 ; ' the just for the unjust,' 1 Pet. iii. 18. Our sins were the meritorious cause of Christ's sufferings, Heb. iv. 15, and vii. 26. Christ did not suffer for himself, ' for he was without sin, neither was guile found in his mouth.' The grand design, errand, and business about which Christ came into the world, was to save sinners, 1 Tim. i. 15. He had his name Jesus, because he was to save his people from their sins, Mat. i. 21. He died for our sins ; not only for our good, as the final cause, but for our sins, as the procuring cause of his death. ' He was delivered for our offences,' ' Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures,' Rom. iv. 25, and 1 Cor. xv. 3 ; that is, according to what was typified, prophesied, and promised in the blessed Scriptures: Gal. i. 4, ' He gave himself for our sins ;' 1 Pet. ii. 24, ' Who his own self bare our sins in his own body upon the tree ;' . . . by whose stripes ye were healed, *οὗ τῶ μώλωπι αὐτοῦ ἰάθητε*. The whole Testament hath not the like two relatives at once in the original, as if I should say, by whose stripes of his we are healed. Peter, saith Estius, alludes to the stripes that servants receive from their cruel masters ; therefore he returns to the second person, ' ye are healed.' Here you see that the physician's blood became the sick man's salve. We can hardly believe the power of sword salve ! But here is a mystery, that only the gospel can assure us of, that the wounding of one should be the cure of another. Oh, what an odious thing is sin to God, that he will pardon none without blood, yea, without the blood of his dearest Son ! Heb. ix. 22, and 1 Pet. i. 18, 19. Oh, what a hell of wickedness must there be in sin, that nothing can expiate it but the best, the purest, the noblest blood that ever run in veins ! Oh, what a transcendent evil must sin be, that nothing can purge it away but death, but the death of the cross, no death but an accursed death ! Oh, what a leprosy is sin, that it must have blood, yea, the blood of God, to take it away !

Now thus you have seen, (1.) That the sufferings of Christ have been free and voluntary, and not constrained or forced. (2.) That they have been very great and heinous. (3.) That the punishments which Christ did suffer for our sins, were, in their parts, and kinds, and degrees, and proportion, all those punishments which were due unto us by reason of our sins ; and which we ourselves would otherwise have suffered. (4.) That Jesus Christ did feel and suffer the very torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner. (5.) That he that did feel and suffer the torments of hell, though not after a hellish manner, was God-man. (6.) That the punishments that Christ did sustain for us, must be referred only to the substance, and not to the circumstances of punishment. (7.) That the meritorious cause of all the sufferings of Christ, were the sins of his people.

IV. Now to that great question of giving up your account at last, according to the import of those ten scriptures in the margin,¹ you may, in the fourth place, make this safe, noble, and happy plea. ' O

¹ Eccles. xi. 12, 14 ; Mat. xii. 14, and xviii. 23 ; Luke xvi. 3 ; Rom. xiv. 10 ; 2 Cor. v. 10 ; Heb. ix. 27, and xiii. 17 ; 1 Pet. iv. 7.

blessed God, Jesus Christ hath suffered all those things that were due unto me for my sin; he hath suffered even to the worst and uttermost; for all that the law threatened was a curse, and Christ was made a curse for me, Gal. iii. 13; he knew no sin, but was made sin for me, 2 Cor. v. 21; and what Christ suffered he suffered as my surety, and in my stead; and therefore, what he suffered for me, is as if I had suffered all that myself; and his sufferings hath appeased thy wrath, and satisfied thy justice, and reconciled thee to myself. For, 2 Cor. v. 19, 'God was in Christ, reconciling the world to himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them.' 'And he hath reconciled both Jews and Gentiles unto God, in one body, on the cross; having slain enmity thereby.' Jesus Christ took upon him all my sins, they were all of them laid upon him, and he bare or suffered all the wrath and punishment due for them, and he suffered all as my surety, in my stead, and for my good; and thou didst design him for all this, and accepted of it as sufficient and effectual on my behalf. Oh, with what comfort, courage, and confidence, may a believer, upon these considerations, hold up his head in the great day of his account. Let me now make a few inferences from the consideration of all the great and grievous sufferings of our Lord Jesus Christ: and therefore,

1. First, *Let us stand still, and admire and wonder at the love of Jesus Christ to poor sinners; that Christ should rather die for us, than the angels. They were creatures of a more noble extract, and in all probability might have brought greater revenues of glory to God: yet that Christ should pass by those golden vessels, and make us vessels of glory,—oh, what amazing and astonishing love is this!*¹ The angels were more honourable and excellent creatures than we. They were celestial spirits; we earthly bodies, dust and ashes: they were immediate attendants upon God, they were, as I may say, of his privy chamber; we servants of his in the lower house of this world, farther remote from his glorious presence: their office was to sing hallelujahs, songs of praise to God in the heavenly paradise; ours to dress the garden of Eden, which was but an earthly paradise: they sinned but once, and but in thought, as is commonly thought; but Adam sinned in thought by lusting, in deed by tasting, and in word by excusing. Why did not Christ suffer for their sins, as well as for ours? or if for any, why not for theirs rather than ours? 'Even so, O Father, for so it pleased thee,' Mat. xi. 26. We move this question, not as being curious to search thy secret counsels, O Lord, but that we may be the more swallowed up in the admiration of the 'breadth, and length, and depth, and height of the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge.' The apostle, being in a holy admiration of Christ's love, affirms it to pass knowledge, Eph. iii. 18, 19; that God, who is the eternal Being, should love man when he had scarce a being, Prov. viii. 30, 31, that he should be enamoured with deformity, that he should love us when in our blood, Ezek. xvi., that he should pity us when no eye pitied us, no, not our own. Oh, such was Christ's transcendent love, that man's extreme misery could not abate it. The deploredness of man's condition did but heighten the holy flame of Christ's love. It is as high as heaven, who can reach it? It is as

¹ This is the envy of devils, and the admiration of angels and saints.

low as hell, who can understand it? Heaven, through its glory, could not contain him, man being miserable, nor hell's torments make him refrain, such was his perfect matchless love to fallen man. That Christ's love should extend to the ungodly, to sinners, to enemies that were in arms of rebellion against him, Rom. v. 6, 8, 10; yea, not only so, but that he should hug them in his arms, lodge them in his bosom, dandle them upon his knees, and lay them to his breasts, that they may suck and be satisfied, is the highest improvement of love, Isa. lxvi. 11-13. That Christ should come from the eternal bosom of his Father, to a region of sorrow and death, John i. 18; that God should be manifested in the flesh, the Creator made a creature, Isa. liii. 4; that he that was clothed with glory, should be wrapped with rags of flesh, 1 Tim. iii. 16; that he that filled heaven, should be cradled in a manger, John xvii. 5; that the God of Israel should fly into Egypt, Mat. ii. 14; that the God of strength should be weary; that the judge of all flesh should be condemned; that the God of life should be put to death, John xix. 41; that he that is one with his Father, should cry out of misery, 'O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me!' Mat. xxvi. 39; that he that had the keys of hell and death, Rev. i. 18, should lie imprisoned in the sepulchre of another, having, in his lifetime, nowhere to lay his head; nor after death, to lay his body, John xix. 41, 42; and all this for man, for fallen man, for miserable man, for worthless man, is beyond the thoughts of created natures. The sharp, the universal and continual sufferings of our Lord Jesus Christ, from the cradle to the cross, does above all other things speak out the transcendent love of Jesus Christ to poor sinners. That wrath, that great wrath, that fierce wrath, that pure wrath, that infinite wrath, that matchless wrath of an angry God, that was so terribly impressed upon the soul of Christ, quickly spent his natural strength, and turned his moisture into the drought of summer, Ps. xxxii. 4; and yet all this wrath he patiently underwent, that sinners might be saved, and that 'he might bring many sons unto glory,' Heb. ii. 10. Oh wonder of love! Love is passive, it enables to suffer. The Curtii laid down their lives for the Romans, because they loved them; so it was love that made our dear Lord Jesus lay down his life, to save us from hell and to bring us to heaven. As the pelican, out of her love to her young ones, when they are bitten with serpents, feeds them with her own blood to recover them again; so when we were bitten by the old serpent, and our wound incurable, and we in danger of eternal death, then did our dear Lord Jesus, that he might recover us and heal us, feed us with his own blood, Gen. iii. 15; John vi. 53-56. Oh love unspeakable! This made one cry out, 'Lord, thou hast loved me more than thyself; for thou hast laid down thy life for me.'¹ It was only the golden link of love that fastened Christ to the cross, John x. 17, and that made him die freely for us, and that made him willing 'to be numbered among transgressors,' Isa. liii. 12, that we might be numbered among [the] 'general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven,' Heb. xii. 23. If Jonathan's love to David was wonderful, 2 Sam. i. 26, how wonderful must the love of Christ be to us, which led him by the hand to make him-

¹ *Dilexisti me Domine magis quam teipsum.—Bernard.*

self an offering for us, Heb. x. 10, which Jonathan never did for David: for though Jonathan loved David's life and safety well, yet he loved his own better; for when his father cast a javelin at him to smite him, he flies for it, and would not abide his father's fury, being very willing to sleep in a whole skin, notwithstanding his wonderful love to David, 1 Sam. xx. 33-35; making good the philosopher's notion, that man is a life-lover. Christ's love is like his name, and that is Wonderful, Isa. ix. 6; yea, it is so wonderful, that it is *supra omnem creaturam, ultra omnem mensuram, contra omnem naturam*, above all creatures, beyond all measure, contrary to all nature. It is above all creatures, for it is above the angels, and therefore above all others. It is beyond all measure, for time did not begin it, and time shall never end it; place doth not bound it, sin doth not exceed it, no estate, no age, no sex is denied it, tongues cannot express it, understandings cannot conceive it: and it is contrary to all nature; for what nature can love where it is hated? what nature can forgive where it is provoked? what nature can offer reconciliation where it receiveth wrong? what nature can heap up kindness upon contempt, favour upon ingratitude, mercy upon sin? and yet Christ's love hath led him to all this; so that well may we spend all our days in admiring and adoring of this wonderful love, and be always ravished with the thoughts of it. But,

2. Secondly, Then look that *ye love the Lord Jesus Christ with a superlative love, with an overtopping love*. There are none have suffered so much for you as Christ; there are none that can suffer so much for you as Christ. The least measure of that wrath that Christ hath sustained for you, would have broke the hearts, necks, and backs of all created beings. O my friends! there is no love but a superlative love that is any ways suitable to the transcendent sufferings of dear Jesus. Oh, love him above your lusts, love him above your relations, love him above the world, love him above all your outward contentments and enjoyments; yea, love him above your very lives; for thus the patriarchs, prophets, apostles, saints, primitive Christians, and the martyrs of old, have loved our Lord Jesus Christ with an overtopping love: Rev. xii. 11, 'They loved not their lives unto the death;' that is, they slighted, contemned, yea, despised their lives, exposing them to hazard and loss, out of love to the Lamb, 'who had washed them in his blood.'¹ I have read of one Kilian, a Dutch schoolmaster, who being asked whether he did not love his wife and children, answered, Were all the world a lump of gold, and in my hands to dispose of, I would leave it at my enemies' feet to live with them in a prison; but my soul and my Saviour are dearer to me than all. If my father, saith Jerome,² should stand before me, and my mother hang upon, and my brethren should press about me, I would break through my brethren, throw down my father, and tread underfoot my mother, to cleave to Jesus Christ. Had I ten heads, said Henry Voes, they should all off for Christ. If every hair of my head, said John Ardley, martyr, were a man, they should all suffer for the faith of Christ. Let fire, racks, pulleys, said Ignatius, and all the

¹ Acts xx. 24, and xxi. 12, 13; 2 Cor. i. 8-10, iv. 11, and xi. 23; Heb. xi. 36-39.

² Jerome ad Heliodor, epist. 1.

torments of hell come upon me, so I may win Christ. Love made Jerome to say, O my Saviour, didst thou die for love of me?—a love more dolorous than death; but to me a death more lovely than love itself. I cannot live, love thee, and be longer from thee.¹ George Carpenter, being asked whether he did not love his wife and children, which stood weeping before him, answered, My wife and children!—my wife and children! are dearer to me than all Bavaria; yet, for the love of Christ, I know them not. That blessed virgin in Basil, being condemned for Christianity to the fire, and having her estate and life offered her if she would worship idols, cried out, ‘Let money perish, and life vanish, Christ is better than all.’ Sufferings for Christ are the saints’ greatest glory; they are those things wherein they have most gloried: *Cruelitas vestra, gloria nostra*, your cruelty is our glory, saith Tertullian. It is reported of Babylas, that when he was to die for Christ, he desired this favour, that his chains might be buried with him, as the ensigns of his honour.² Thus you see with what a superlative love, with what an overtopping love, former saints have loved our Lord Jesus; and can you, Christians, who are cold and low in your love to Christ, read over these instances, and not blush? Certainly the more Christ hath suffered for us, the more dear Christ should be unto us; the more bitter his sufferings have been for us, the more sweet his love should be to us, and the more eminent should be our love to him. Oh, let a suffering Christ lie nearest your hearts; let him be your manna, your tree of life, your morning star. It is better to part with all than with this pearl of price. Christ is that golden pipe through which the golden oil of salvation runs; and oh, how should this inflame our love to Christ! Oh that our hearts were more affected with the sufferings of Christ! Who can tread upon these hot coals, and his heart not burn in love to Christ, and cry out with Ignatius, Christ my love is crucified? Cant. viii. 7, 8. If a friend should die for us, how would our hearts be affected with his kindness! and shall the God of glory lay down his life for us, and shall we not be affected with his goodness? John x. 17, 18. Shall Saul be affected with David’s kindness in sparing his life, 1 Sam. xxiv. 16, and shall not we be affected with Christ’s kindness, who, to save our life, lost his own? Oh, the infinite love of Christ, that he should leave his Father’s bosom, John i. 18, and come down from heaven, that he might carry you up to heaven, John xiv. 1–4; that he that was a Son should take upon him the form of a servant, Phil. ii. 5–8; that you of slaves should be made sons, of enemies should be made friends, of heirs of wrath should be made heirs of God and joint-heirs with Christ, Rom. viii. 17; that to save us from everlasting ruin, Christ should stick at nothing, but be willing to be made flesh, to lie in a manger, to be tempted, deserted, persecuted, and to die upon a cross! Oh what flames of love should these things kindle in all our hearts to Christ! Love is compared to

¹ *Certè non amant illi Christum, qui aliquid plus quàm Christum amant*: They do not love Christ, who love anything more than Christ.—*Augustine de Resurrect.*—The more Christ hath suffered for us, the dearer Christ should be unto us; the greater and the bitterer Christ’s sufferings have been for us, the greater and the sweeter should our love be to him.

² For all above names, see Foxe and Clarke, as before.—G.

fire; in heaping love upon our enemy, we heap coals of fire upon his head, Rom. xii. 19, 20; Prov. xxvi. 21. Now the property of fire is to turn all it meets with into its own nature: fire maketh all things fire; the coal maketh burning coals; and is it not a wonder then that Christ, having heaped abundance of the fiery coals of his love upon our heads, we should yet be but key-cold in our love to him. Ah! what sad metal are we made of, that Christ's fiery love cannot inflame our love to Christ! Moses wondered why the bush consumed not, when he sees it all on fire, Exod. iii. 3; but if you please but to look into your own hearts, you shall see a greater wonder; for you shall see that, though you walk like those three children in the fiery furnace, Dan. iii., even in the midst of Christ's fiery love flaming round about you; yet there is but little, very little, true smell of that sweet fire of love to be felt or found upon you or in you. Oh, when shall the sufferings of a dear and tender-hearted Saviour kindle such a flame of love in all our hearts, as shall still be a-breaking forth in our lips and lives, in our words and ways, to the praise and glory of free grace? Oh that the sufferings of a loving Jesus might at last make us all sick of love! Cant. ii. v. Oh let him for ever lie betwixt our breasts, Cant. i. 13, who hath left his Father's bosom for a time, that he might be embosomed by us for ever. But,

3. Thirdly, Then in the sufferings of Christ, as in a gospel-glass, you may see *the odious nature of sin, and accordingly learn to hate it, arm against it, turn from it, and subdue it*. Sin never appears so odious as when we behold it in the red glass of Christ's sufferings, Ps. cxix., civ., exiii., cxxviii., and Rom. vii. 15, and xii. 9. Can we look upon sin as the occasion of all Christ's sufferings, can we look upon sin as that which made Christ a curse, and that made him forsaken of his Father, and that made him live such a miserable life, and that brought him to die such a shameful, painful, and cruel death, and our hearts not rise against it? Shall our sins be grievous unto Christ, and shall they not be odious unto us? shall he die for our sins, and shall not we die to our sins? did not he therefore suffer for sin, that we might cease from sin? did not he 'bear our sins in his own body on the tree, that we being dead to sin, should live to righteousness'? 1 Pet. iv. 1, and ii. 24. If one should kill our father, would we hug and embrace him as our father? no, we would be revenged on him. Sin hath killed our Saviour, and shall we not be revenged on it. Can a man look upon that snake that hath stung his dearly-beloved spouse to death, and preserve it alive, warm it at the fire, and hug it in his bosom, and not rather stab it with a thousand wounds? It is sin that hath stung our dear Jesus to death, that has crucified our Lord, clouded his glory, and shed his precious blood, and oh, how should this stir up our indignation against it. Ah, how can a Christian make much of those sins that killed his dearest Lord! how can he cherish those sins that betrayed Christ, and apprehended Christ, and bound Christ, and condemned Christ, and scourged Christ, and that violently drew him to the cross, and there murdered him! It was neither Judas, nor Pilate, nor the Jews, nor the soldiers that could have done our Lord Jesus the least hurt, had not our sins, like so many butchers and hangmen, come in to their assistance. After Julius Cæsar was

treacherously murdered in the senate-house, Antonius brought forth his coat, all-bloody, cut and mangled, and laying it open to the view of the people, said, Look, here is your emperor's coat; and as the bloody conspirators have dealt by it, so have they dealt with Cæsar's body; whereupon the people were all in an uproar, and nothing would satisfy them but the death of the murderers, and they ran to the houses of the conspirators and burnt them down to the ground. But what was Cæsar's coat and Cæsar's body to the body of our dear Lord Jesus, which was all bloody, rent, and torn for our sins? Ah, how should this provoke us to be revenged on our sins! how should we for ever loathe and abhor them! how should our fury be whetted against them! how should we labour with all our might to be the death of those sins that have been the death of so great a Lord, and will, if not prevented, be the death of our souls to all eternity! To see God thrust the sword of his pure, infinite, and incensed wrath through the very heart of his dearest Son, notwithstanding all his supplications, prayers, tears, and strong cries, Heb. v. 7, is the highest discovery of the Lord's hatred and indignation of sin that ever was or will be. It is true God discovered his great hatred against sin by turning Adam out of paradise, and by casting the angels down to hell, by drowning the old world, and by raining hell out of heaven upon Sodom and Gomorrah, and by the various and dreadful judgments that he has been a-pouring forth upon the world in all ages; but all this hatred is but the picture of hatred, to that hatred which God manifested against sin in causing the whole curse to meet upon our crucified Lord, as all streams meet in the sea. It is true God discovers his hatred of sin by those endless, easeless, and remediless torments that he inflicts upon devils and damned spirits; but this is no hatred to that hatred against sin which God discovered when he opened all the floodgates of his envenomed wrath upon his Son, his own Son, his only Son, his Son that always pleased him, his Son that never offended him, Isa. liii. 5, 6, and Prov. viii. 30, 31, and Mat. iii. 17. Should you see a father that had but one son, and he such a son in whom he always delighted, and by whom he had never been provoked; a son that always made it his business, his work, his heaven to promote the honour and glory of his father, John viii. 49, 50, and ix. 4; a son who was always most at ease when most engaged in his father's service; a son who counted it his meat and drink to do his father's will, John iv. 34: now should you see the father of such a son inflicting the most exquisite pains and punishments, tortures and torments, calamities and miseries upon this his dearest son, you would readily conclude that certainly the sins, the offences that have put the father upon exercising such amazing, such matchless severity, fury and cruelty upon his only son, are infinitely hateful, odious, and abominable to him.¹ Now, if you please but to cast your eye upon the actings of God the Father towards Jesus Christ, you will find that he hath inflicted more torments and greater torments upon the Son of his dearest love, than all mortals ever have or could inflict upon their only sons: Isa. liii. 6, 'The Lord hath laid

¹ Jer. xlv. 4, and Zech. viii. 17. The Rabbins, to scare their scholars from sin, used to tell them that sin made God's head ache; but I may say sin hath made Christ's head ache, and his heart ache too.

upon him the iniquity of us all,' *Heb.*, hath made the iniquities of us all to meet on him, or to light or fall on him rather. God made all the penalties and sufferings that were due to us to fall upon Jesus Christ, as a man is wont to fall with all his might, in a hostile manner, upon his enemy. God himself inflicted upon dear Jesus whatsoever was requisite to the satisfying of his justice, to the obtaining of pardon, and to the saving of all his elect: ver. 10, 'It pleased the Lord to bruise him, he hath put him to grief.' All the devils in hell, nor all the men upon earth, could never have bruised or put to grief our Lord Jesus. If it had not pleased the Lord to bruise him and put him to grief, he had never been bruised or put to grief. Oh, how should this work us to look upon sin with indignation!

Suppose a man should come to a table, and there should be a knife laid at his trencher, and it should be told him, This is the very knife that cut the throat of your child or father; if this person should use this knife as any other knife, would not every one say, Surely this man had but very little love to his father or his child, who can use this bloody knife as any other knife. So when you meet with any temptation to sin, oh, then say, This is the very knife that cut the throat of Jesus Christ, and pierced his sides, that was the cause of his sufferings, and that made Christ to be a curse; and accordingly let your hearts rise against it. Ah, how well doth it become Christians to look upon sin as that accursed thing that made Christ a curse, and accordingly to abhor it! Oh, with what detestation should a man fling away such a knife! and with the like detestation should every Christian fling away his sins, as Ephraim did his idols: 'Get you hence; what have I any more to do with you?' *Hosea* xiv. 8. Sin, thou hast slain my Lord; thou hast been the only cause of the death of my Saviour, *Isa.* ii. 20, and xxx. 22. Let us say as David, 'Is not this the blood of the men that went in jeopardy of their lives?' *2 Sam.* xxiii. 17. So is not this the sin that poured out Christ's blood? Oh, how should this enrage our hearts against sin, because it cost the Captain of our salvation, *Heb.* ii. 10, not the hazard, but the very loss of his life! God shewed Moses a tree wherewith he might make the bitter waters sweet, *Exod.* xv. 25; but, lo! here is a tree wherewith ye may make the sweet waters of sin to become bitter. Look upon the tree on which Christ was crucified, remember his cross, and the pains he suffered thereon, and the seeming sweetness that is in sin will quickly vanish. When you are solicited to sin, cast your eye upon Christ's cross, remember his astonishing sufferings for sin, and it will soon grow distasteful to your souls; for how can that choose but be hateful to us, if we seriously consider how hurtful it was to Jesus Christ? Who can look upon the cross of Christ and excuse his sin, as Adam did, saying, 'The woman which thou gavest me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat?' *Gen.* iii. 12. Who can look upon the cross of Christ and colour his sin, as Judas did, saying, 'Hail, Master?' *Mat.* xxvi. 49. Who can look upon the cross of Christ and deny his sin, as Gehazi did, saying, 'Thy servant went no whither?' *2 Kings* v. 25. Who can look upon the cross of Christ and defend his sin, as Jonah did, saying, 'I do well to be angry?' *Jonah* iv. 9. O sirs! where is that hatred of sin that used to be in the saints of old? David could say, 'I hate vain thoughts, and

I hate every false way,' Ps. cxix. 104, 113, 128. And Paul could say, 'What I hate that do I,' Rom. vii. 15. It is better, saith one, to be in hell with Christ, than to be in heaven with sin. Oh, how odious was sin in the saints' eye! The primitive Christians chose rather to be cast to lions without than to be left to lusts within, so great was their hatred of sin.¹ 'I had rather,' saith Anselm, 'go to hell pure from sin, than to heaven polluted with that guilt.' 'I will rather,' saith another, 'leap into a bonfire, than wilfully to sin against God.' Under the law, if an ox gored a man that he died, the ox was to be killed, Exod. xxi. 28; sin hath gored and pierced our dear Lord Jesus, oh, let it die for it! oh, avenge yourselves upon it, as Samson did avenge himself upon the Philistines for his two eyes! Judg. xvi. 28. Plutarch reports of Marcus Cato, that he never declared his opinion in any matter in the senate, but he would close it with this passage, 'Methinks still Carthage should be destroyed;' so a Christian should never cast his eye upon the cross of Christ, the sufferings of Christ, nor upon his sins, but his heart should say, Methinks pride should be destroyed, and unbelief should be destroyed, and hypocrisy should be destroyed, and earthly-mindedness should be destroyed, and self-love should be destroyed, and vain-glory should be destroyed, &c. The Jews would not have the pieces of silver which Judas cast down in the temple put in the treasury, because they were the price of blood, Mat. xxvii. 5, 6. Oh, lodge not any one sin in the treasury of your hearts, for they are all the price of blood. But,

4. Fourthly, Let the sufferings of our Lord Jesus *raise in all our hearts a high estimation of Christ*. Oh, let us prize a suffering Christ above all our duties, and above all our graces, and above all our privileges, and above all our outward contentments, and above all our spiritual enjoyments! Mat. x. 37; Luke xiv. 26. A suffering Christ is a commodity of greater value than all the riches of the Indies, yea, than all the wealth of the whole world. 'He is better than rubies,' saith Solomon, 'and all the things thou canst desire are not to be compared to him,' Prov. viii. 11. He is that pearl of price which the wise merchant purchased with all that ever he had, Mat. xiii. 46; no man can buy such gold too dear. Joseph,—a type of the Lord Jesus,—then a precious jewel of the world, was far more precious, had the Ishmaelitish merchants known so much, than all the balms and myrrhs that they transported, Gen. xxvii. 37; and so is a suffering Christ, as all will grant that really know him, and that have experienced the sweet of union and communion with him. Christ went through heaven and hell, life and death, sorrow and suffering, misery and cruelty, and all to bring us to glory, and shall we not prize him? When in a storm the nobles of Xerxes were to lighten the ship to preserve their king's life, they did their obeisance, and leaped into the sea; but our Lord Jesus Christ, to preserve our lives, our souls, he leaps into a sea of wrath, Col. i. 18. Oh, how should this work us to set up Christ above all! What a deal ado has there been in the world about Alexander the Great, and Constantine the Great, and Pompey the Great, because of their civil power and authority; but what was all their greatness and grandeur to that greatness and grandeur that God

¹ *Ad leonem magis quam lenonem*, saith Tertullian.

the Father put upon our Lord Jesus Christ when he gave all power in heaven and in earth unto him, and set him down at his own right hand? Mat. xxviii. 13; Heb. i. 13; Eph. i. 20. O sirs! will you value men according to their titles, and will you not highly value our Lord Jesus Christ, who has the most magnificent titles given him? He is called King of kings and Lord of lords, Rev. xvii. 14, and xix. 16. It is observed by learned Drusius, that those titles were usually given to the great kings of Persia, than which there was none assumed more to themselves than they did; yet the Holy Ghost attributes these great titles to Christ, to let us know that, as God hath exalted Christ above all earthly powers, so we should magnify and exalt him accordingly. Paul, casting his eye upon a suffering Christ, tells us that he esteems of *τὰ πάντα*, 'all things,' Phil. iii. 8, as nothing in comparison of Christ. 'All things' is the greatest account that can be cast up, for it includeth all prizes, all sums; it taketh in heaven, it taketh in the vast and huge globe and circle of the capacious world, and all excellencies, within its bosom. 'All things' includes all nations, all angels, all gold, all jewels, all honours, all delights, and everything else besides; and yet the apostle looks upon all these things but as *σκύβαλα*, 'dung,' dogs' dung, as some interpret the word, or dogs' meat, coarse and contemptible, in comparison of dear Jesus.¹ Galeacius, [Carraciolus,] that noble Italian marquis, was of the same mind and metal with Paul, for when he was strongly tempted, and solicited with great sums of money and preferments, to return to the Romish church, he gave this heroic answer, Cursed be he that prefers all the wealth of the world to one day's communion with Christ. What if a man had large domains, stately buildings, and ten thousand rivers of oil! What if all the mountains of the world were pearl, the mighty rocks rubies, and the whole globe a shining chrysolite! yet all this were not to be named in the same day wherein there is mention made of a suffering Christ. Look, as one ocean hath more waters than all the rivers in the world, and as one sun hath more light than all the luminaries in heaven, so one suffering Christ is more 'all' to a poor soul than if it had the *all* of the whole world a thousand times over and over. O sirs! if you cast but your eye upon a suffering Christ, a crucified Jesus, there you shall find righteousness in him to cover all your sins, and plenty enough in him to supply all your wants, and grace enough in him to subdue all your lusts, and wisdom enough in him to resolve all your doubts, and power enough in him to vanquish all your enemies, and virtue enough in him to heal all your diseases, and fulness enough in him both to satisfy you and save you, and that to the utmost,² Heb. vii. 25. All the good things that can be reckoned up here below have only a finite and limited benignity. Some can clothe but cannot feed, others can nourish but they cannot heal, others

¹ *σκύβαλα*, *quasi κνίσβαλα*, *mīcæ quæ canibus*.—*Vide* a-Lapide: *vide* Bezam. The original word notes the filth that comes out of the entrails of beasts, or offal cast to dogs.

² I have read of a Roman servant, who knowing his master was sought for by officers to be put to death, he put himself into his master's clothes, that he might be taken for him; and so he was, and was put to death for him; whereupon his master, in memory of his thankfulness to him and honour of him, erected a brazen statue; but what a statue of gold should we set up in our hearts to the eternal honour and exaltation of that Jesus, who not in our clothes but in our very nature, hath laid down his life for us!

can enrich, but they cannot secure, others can adorn but cannot advance, all do serve but none do satisfy. They are like a beggar's coat, made up of many pieces, not all enough either to beautify, defend, or satisfy; but there is enough in a suffering Christ to fill us and satisfy us to the full. Christ has the greatest worth and wealth in him. Look, as the worth and value of many pieces of silver is to be found in one piece of gold, so all the petty excellencies that are scattered abroad in the creatures are to be found in a bleeding, dying Christ; yea, all the whole volume of perfections which is spread through heaven and earth is epitomised in him that suffered on the cross—*Nec Christus, nec cælum patitur hyperbolen*, A man cannot hyperbolise in speaking of Christ and heaven, but must entreat his hearers, as Tully doth his readers concerning the worth of L. Crassus—*Ut majus quiddam de iis quam quæ scripta sunt suspicarentur*, That they would conceive much more than he was able to express.¹ Certainly it is as easy to compass the heavens with a span, and contain the sea in a nut-shell, as to relate fully a suffering Christ's excellencies, or heaven's happiness. O sirs! there is in a crucified Jesus something proportionable to all the straits, wants, necessities, and desires of his poor people.² He is bread to nourish them, and a garment to cover and adorn them, a physician to heal them, a counsellor to advise them, a captain to defend them, a prince to rule, a prophet to teach, and a priest to make atonement for them; a husband to protect, a father to provide, a brother to relieve, a foundation to support, a root to quicken, a head to guide, a treasure to enrich, a sun to enlighten, and a fountain to cleanse. Now what can any Christian desire more to satisfy him and save him, to make him holy and happy in both worlds? Shall the Romans and other nations highly value those that have but ventured to lay down their lives for their country, and shall not we highly value the Lord Jesus Christ, who hath actually laid down his life for his sheep? John x. 11, 15, 17. I have read of one who, walking in the fields by himself, of a sudden fell into loud cries and weeping, and being asked by one that passed by and overheard him the cause of his lamentation,—I weep, saith he, to think that the Lord Jesus Christ should do so much for us men, and yet not one man of a thousand so much as mind him or think of him. Oh what a bitter lamentation have we cause to take up, that the Lord Jesus Christ has suffered so many great and grievous things for poor sinners, and that there are so few that sincerely love him, or that highly value him: most men preferring their lusts, or else the toys and trifles of this world, above him. But,

5. Fifthly, Let the sufferings of our Lord Jesus Christ *work us all into a gracious willingness to embrace sufferings for his sake, and cheerfully and resolutely to take up his cross and follow him*, Mat. xvi. 24. Did Christ suffer, who knew no sin; and shall we think it strange to suffer, who know nothing but sin? Shall he lie sweltering under his Father's wrath, and shall we cry out of men's anger? Was he crowned with thorns, and must we be crowned with rose-buds?³ Was his whole

¹ De Oratore, 3.

² John vi. 5, 6, 37; Rev. xiii. 14; Mat. ix. 12; Isa. ix. 6; Heb. ii. 10; Acts v. 31, and vii. 37, 38; Heb. ii. 17, 18, and iv. 15, 16; 2 Cor. xi. 2; Isa. ix. 6, 7; John xx. 17; Isa. xxviii. 16; Rev. xxii. 16; Eph. i. 22, 23.

³ Godfrey of Bouillon, first king of Jerusalem, refused to be crowned with a crown of

life, from the cradle to the cross, made up of nothing but sorrows and sufferings; and must our lives, from the cradle to the grave, be filled up with nothing but pleasures and delights? Was he despised, and must we be admired? Was he debased, and must we be exalted? Was he poor, and must we be rich? Was he low, and must we be high? Did he drink of a bitter cup, a bloody cup; and will no cups serve our turns but cups of consolation? Let us not think anything too much to do for Christ, nor anything too great to suffer for Christ, nor anything too dear to part with for such a Christ, such a Saviour, that thought nothing too much to do, or too grievous to suffer, that so he might accomplish the work of our redemption. He left heaven for us; and shall not we let go this world for him? He left his Father's bosom for us, John i. 18; and shall not we leave the bosoms of our dearest relations for him? Ps. xlv. 10, 11; Mat. x. 37. He underwent all sorts of sufferings for us, let us as readily encounter with all sorts of sufferings for him. Paul was so inured to sufferings for Christ, that he could rejoice in his sufferings, he gloried most in his chains, and he looked upon his scars, buffetings, scourgings, stonings for Christ, as his greatest triumphs, 2 Cor. xii. 10, and xi. 23-28. And how ambitious were the primitive Christians of martyrdom in the cause of Christ: and of late, in the times of the Marian persecution, how many hundreds cheerfully and willingly laid down their lives—mounting Elijah-like to heaven in fiery chariots! And oh, how will Christ own and honour such Christians at last, as have not set on others, but exposed themselves to hazards, losses, and sufferings for his sake! Rev. iii. 21, as those brave souls, who loved not their lives unto the death, Rev. xii. 11; that is, they despised their lives in comparison of Christ; they exposed their bodies to horrible and painful deaths, their temporal estates to the spoil, and their persons to all manner of shame and contempt, for the cause of Christ, Heb. xi. 33-39, and x. 34. In the days of that bloody persecutor Dioclesian, the Christians shewed as glorious power in the faith of martyrdom as in the faith of miracles, the valour of the patients, and the savageness of the persecutors, striving together; till both, exceeding nature and belief, bred wonder and astonishment in beholders and readers.¹ In all ages and generations, they that have been born after the flesh have persecuted them that have been born after the Spirit, Gal. iv. 29; and the seed of the serpent have been still a-multiplying of troubles upon the seed of the woman. Would any man take the church's picture, saith Luther, then let him paint a poor silly maid, sitting in a wilderness, compassed about with hungry lions, wolves, boars, and bears, and with all manner of other cruel hurtful beasts; and in the midst of a great many furious men, assaulting her every moment and minute. And why should we wonder at this, when we consider that the whole life of Christ was filled up with all sorts and kinds of sufferings? Oh, where is that brave spirit that has been upon the saints of old? Blessed Bradford looked upon his sufferings for Christ as an evidence to him that he was in the right way. 'It is better for me to be a martyr

gold, saying that it became not a Christian to wear a crown of gold, where Christ, for our salvation, had worn a crown of thorns.

¹ *Certatim gloriosa in certamina ruebatur, &c.—Sulpicius.*

than a monarch,' said Ignatius when he was to suffer.¹ Happy is that soul, and to be equalled with angels, who is willing to suffer, if it were possible, as great things for Christ, as Christ hath suffered for it, saith Jerome. Sufferings are the ensigns of heavenly nobility, saith Calvin. Modestus, lieutenant to Julian the emperor, said to Julian, While they suffer they deride us, saith he, and the torments are more fearful to them that stand by than to the tormented. Luther reports of Vincentius, that he laughed at those that slew him, saying, that to Christians tortures and death were but sports, and he gloried when he went upon hot burning coals, as if he trod upon roses. It was a notable saying of a French martyr, when the rope was about his fellow, Give me that golden chain, and dub me a knight of that noble order. Paul rattled his chain, which he bore for the gospel, and was as proud of it as a woman of her ornaments, saith Chrysostom. Do your worst, do your worst, said Justin Martyr to his persecutors; but this I will tell you, that you may put all that you are like to gain by the bargain into your eye and weep it out again. Basil will tell you, that the most cruel martyrdom is but a trick to escape death, to pass from life to life, as he speaks, for it can be but a day's journey between the cross and paradise. Their names that are written in red letters of blood in the church's calendar, are written in golden letters in Christ's register, in the book of life, saith Prudentius. Though the cross be bitter, yet it is but short. A little storm, as one said of Julian's persecution, and an eternal calm follows. Methinks, said one, I tread upon pearls, when he trod upon hot burning coals, and I feel no more pain than if I lay in a bed of down, and yet he lay in flames of fire. 'I am heartily angry,' saith Luther, 'with those that speak of my sufferings, which, if compared to that which Christ suffered for me, are not once to be mentioned in the same day.' Paul greatly rejoiced in his sufferings for Christ; and therefore oftentimes sings it out: 'I Paul a prisoner,' as you may see by the scriptures in the margin,² not 'I Paul an apostle,' nor 'I Paul rapt up in the third heaven.' Christ shewed his love to him, in rapping him up in the third heaven; and he shews his love to Christ in suffering for him. During the cruel persecutions of the heathen emperors, the Christian faith was spread through all places of the empire, because the oftener they were mowed down, saith Tertullian, the more they grew. 'I am in prison till I am in prison,' said one of the martyrs. 'I am the unmeetest man for this high office of suffering for Christ that ever was appointed to it,' said blessed Sanders. Austin observed, that though there were many thousand Christians put to death for professing Christ, yet they were never the fewer for being slain. Cyprian, speaking of the Christians and martyrs in his time, said, *Occidi poterant, sed vinci non poterant*, They may kill them, but they cannot overcome them.³ 'The more we are cut down by the sword of persecution, the more we increase,' saith Tertullian.

¹ If one man did suffer all the sorrows of all the saints in the world, yet they are not worth one hour's glory in heaven.—*Chrysostom*.

² See Acts xxviii. 17; Eph. iii. 1, and iv. 1; 2 Tim. i. 8; Phil. 1, 9; 2 Cor. xi. 23; Rom. xvi. 7; Col. iv. 10; Phil. 23.

³ Lodde la Corda computeth forty-four several kinds of torment, "wherewith the primitive Christians were tried.—*Adv. Sacr.*, cap. 123.

Eusebius tells us of one that writ to his friend from a stinking dungeon, and dates his letter from 'My delicate orchard.' 'Burn my foot if you will,' said that noble martyr in Basil, 'that it may dance everlastingly with the blessed angels in heaven.' The young child in Josephus, who, when his flesh was pulled in pieces with pincers, by the command of Antiochus, said with a smiling countenance, 'Tyrant, thou lovest time; where are those smarting pains with which thou threatenest me? Make me to shrink and cry out if thou canst:' and Bainam, an English martyr, when the fire was flaming about him, said, 'You Papists talk of miracles, behold here a miracle, I feel no more pain than if I were in a bed of down; it is as sweet to me as a bed of roses. Lawrence, when his body was roasted upon a burning gridiron, cried out, 'This side is roasted enough, turn the other side.' Marcus of Arethusa, when his body was cut and mangled, and anointed with honey, and hung up aloft in a basket, to be stung to death by wasps and bees, looked down, saying, 'I am advanced, despising you that are below.' Henry Voes kissed the stake. Hawks clapped his hands in the flames when they were half consumed. John Noys blessed God that ever he was born to see that day; and Bishop Ridley called his execution day his wedding day. Thus you see a 'cloud of witnesses' to raise and inflame your hearts into a free, ready, willing, cheerful, and resolute suffering for that Jesus who has suffered so much for you. O sirs, when we see all sorts and sexes of Christians, divinely to defy and scorn their torments and tormentors, when we see them conquering in the midst of hideous sufferings, when we hear them expressing their greatest joy in the midst of their greatest sufferings, we cannot but conclude that there was something more than ordinary that did thus raise, cheer, and encourage their spirits in their sufferings; and doubtless this was it, 'the recompense of reward' on the one hand, and the matchless sufferings of Jesus Christ for them on the other hand, Heb. xi. 24-26, and xii. 2. The cordial wherewith Peter is said, by Clemens, to comfort his wife when he saw her led to martyrdom, was this, 'Remember the Lord, whose disciples if we be, we must not think to love better than our master.'

It is said of Antiochus that, being to fight with Judas, captain of the host of the Jews, he showed unto his elephants the blood of the grapes and mulberries, to provoke them the better to fight, 1 Mac. vi. 3, 4: so the Holy Ghost hath set before us the wounds, the blood, the sufferings, the dying of our dear Lord Jesus, to encourage us to suffer, with all readiness and resoluteness, whatsoever calamities or miseries may attend us for Christ's sake, or the gospel's sake. Ah, what a shame would it be if we should not be always ready to suffer anything for his sake, who hath suffered so much for our sins as is beyond all conception, all expression! Never was Jacob more gracious and acceptable to his father Isaac, than when he stood before him clothed in the garments of his rough brother Esau. Then the father, smelling the savour of the elder brother's garments, said, 'Behold, the smell of my son is as the smell of a field which the Lord hath blessed,' Gen. xxvii. 27. And never are we more gracious and acceptable to our heavenly Father, than when we stand before him

clothed in the rough garments of Christ's afflictions and sufferings. O Christians, all your sufferings for Christ, they are but inlets to your glorious reigning with Christ. Justin Martyr saith that when the Romans did immortalise their emperors, as they called it, they brought one to swear that he saw him go to heaven out of the fire; but we may see, by an eye of faith, the blessed souls of martyrs fly to heaven, like Elias in his fiery chariot, or like the angel that appeared to Ma-noah, in the flames. By the consent of the schoolmen, all martyrs shall appear in the church triumphant, bearing the signs of their Christian wounds about them, as so many speaking testimonies of their holy courage, that what here they endured in the behalf of their Saviour may be there an addition to their glory. But,

6. Sixthly, Hath Jesus Christ suffered such great and grievous things for you? Oh then, *in all your fears, doubts, and conflicts with enemies, within or without, fly to the sufferings of Christ as your city of refuge.* Did Christ endure a most ignominious death for thee? Did he take on him thy sinful person, and bear thy sin and death and cross, and was made a sacrifice and curse for thee? Oh then, in all thy inward and outward distresses, shelter thyself under the wings of a suffering Christ, Ps. xc. 1, and xci. 1, 4, 9. I have read of Nero, that he had a shirt made of a salamander's skin, so that if he went through the fire in it, it would keep him from burning. O sirs, a suffering Christ is this salamander's skin, that will keep the saints from burning in the midst of burning, from suffering in the midst of sufferings, from drowning in the midst of drowning, Dan. iii. 24, 29, and Isa. xliii. 2. In all the storms that beat upon your inward or your outward man, eye the sufferings of Christ, lean upon the sufferings of Christ, plead the sufferings of Christ, and triumph in the sufferings of Christ, Zech. xii. 10; Cant. viii. 5; 2 Cor. ii. 14; Eph. vi. 14. It is storied of a martyr,¹ that, writing to his wife, where she might find him when he was fled from home, 'Oh, my dear,' said he, 'if thou desirest to see me, seek me in the side of Christ, in the cleft of the rock, in the hollow of his wounds; for there I have made my nest, there will I dwell, there shalt thou find me, and nowhere else but there.' In every temptation let us look up to a crucified Christ, who is fitted and qualified to succour tempted souls, Heb. ii. 17, 18, and iv. 15, 16. Oh my soul, whenever thou art assaulted, let the wounds of Christ be thy city of refuge whither thou mayest fly and live! Let us learn in every tentation which presseth us, whether it be sin, or death, or curse, or any other evil, to translate it from ourselves to Christ; and all the good in Christ, let us learn to translate it from Christ to ourselves. Look, as the burgess of a town or corporation, sitting in the Parliament-house, beareth the persons of that whole town or place, and what he saith the whole town saith, and what is done to him is done to the whole town; even so Christ upon the cross stood in our place, and bare our sins, Isa. liii. 4-6; and whatsoever he suffered we suffered; and when he died all the faithful died with him and in him. I have read of a gracious woman who, being by Satan strongly tempted, replied, Satan, if thou hast anything to say to me, say it to my Christ, say it to my surety, who has under-

¹ Surius, in vita sancti Elzearii.

taken all for me, who hath paid all my debts, and satisfied divine justice, and set all reckonings even between God and my soul.¹ Do your sins terrify you? Oh then, look up to a crucified Saviour, who bare your sins in his own body on the tree, 1 Pet. ii. 24. When sin stares you in the face, oh then turn your face to a dying Jesus, and behold him with a spear in his side, with thorns in his head, with nails in his feet, and a pardon in his hands.² Hast thou wounded thy conscience by any great fall or falls? Oh then, remember that there is nothing in heaven or earth more efficacious to cure the wounds of conscience than a frequent and serious meditation on the wounds of Christ.³ Doth death, that rides upon the pale horse, Rev. vi. 8, look gashly⁴ and deadly upon thee? Oh then, remember that Christ died for you, Rom. v. 6, 8, and that by his death he hath swallowed up death in victory, 1 Cor. xv. 55-57. Oh, remember that a crucified Christ hath stripped death of his sting, and disarmed it of all its destroying power. Death may buzz about our ears, but it can never sting our souls. Look, as a crucified Christ hath taken away the guilt of sin, though he hath not taken away sin itself, so he hath taken away the sting of death, though he hath not taken away death itself. He spake excellently that said, 'That is not death, but life, which joins the dying man to Christ; and that is not life, but death, which separates the living man from Christ.'⁵ Austin longed to die, that he might see that head that was crowned with thorns. 'Did Christ die for me,' saith one, 'that I might live with him? I will not, therefore, desire to live long from him.' All men go willingly to see him whom they love, and shall I be unwilling to die that I may see him whom my soul loves? Bernard would have us never to let go out of our minds the thoughts of a crucified Christ. Let these, says he, be meat and drink unto you, let them be your sweetness and consolation, your honey and your desire, your reading and your meditation, your contemplation, your life, death, and resurrection. Certainly he that shall live up to this counsel will look upon the king of terrors as the king of desires. Are you apt to tremble when you eye the curse threatened in the law? Oh then, look up to a crucified Christ, and remember that 'he hath redeemed you from the curse of the law, being made a curse for you,' Gal. iii. 13. Doth the wrath of God amaze you? Oh then, look up to a crucified Christ, and remember that Christ hath trod the winepress of his Father's wrath alone, Isa. lxiii. 3, that he might deliver you from wrath to come, 1 Thes. i. 10. Is the face of God clouded?—doth he that should comfort you stand afar off? oh then, look up to a crucified Christ, and remember that he was forsaken for a time, that you might not be forsaken for ever. Are you sometimes afraid of condemnation? Oh then, look upon a crucified Christ, who was condemned that you might be justified, Lam. i. 16. 'Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died.' Rom. viii. 33, 34. Ah, Christians, that you would at last, under all your temptations,

¹ As before.—G.

² The strongest antidote against sin is to look upon sin in the red glass of Christ's blood.—*Austin*.

³ Bern. Ser. 61, in Cant.

⁴ 'Ghastly.'—G.

⁵ Ambrose, in 1 Tim. v. 6. Death will blow the bud of grace into the flower of glory.

afflictions, fears, doubts, conflicts, and disputes, be persuaded to keep a fixed eye upon crucified Jesus ; and remember that all he did he did for you, and that all he suffered he suffered for you ; and this will be a strong cordial to keep you from fainting under all your inward and outward distresses, according to that saying of one of the ancients, *Turbabor, sed non perturbabor, quia vulnerum Christi recordabor*, I may be troubled, but I shall not be overwhelmed, because I remember the print of the nails and of the spear in the hands and side of Jesus Christ, [Augustine.] Oh that Christians would labour, under all their soul-troubles, to keep a fixed eye upon a bleeding Christ ; for there is nothing that will ease them, quiet them, settle them, and satisfy them like this. Many, may I not say most, Christians are more apt to eye their sins, their sorrows, their prayers, their tears, their resolves, their complaints, than they are to eye a suffering Christ ; and from hence springs their greatest woes, wounds, miseries, and dejection of spirit. Oh that a crucified Christ might be for ever in your eye, and always upon your hearts ! But,

7. Seventhly and lastly, Hath Jesus Christ suffered such great and grievous things ? Then this truth *looks sadly and sourly upon the papists*. In this red glass of Christ's blood, you may see how vain and wicked, how ridiculous and superstitious the devices of the papists are, who for pacifying of God's wrath, and for the allaying of his anger, and for satisfying his justice, and for the obtaining of pardon, &c., have appointed penances and pilgrimages, and self-scourgings and soul-masses, and purgatory, and several other suchlike abominations, which the Scripture nowhere commands, but everywhere forbids ; which inventions and abominations of theirs tend only to derogate from the dignity and sufficiency of Christ's sufferings, and to reflect dishonour and disgrace upon that full and perfect price that Christ hath paid for our ransom, and to set up other saviours in the room of our blessed Redeemer.¹ Certainly all Popish pardons, penances, pilgrimages, masses, whippings, scourgings, &c., they unavoidably fall before the sufferings of our Lord Jesus Christ, as Dagon fell before the ark, Goliath before David, Haman before Mordecai, and as the darkness falls before the morning light ; and as for their purgatory, they do not know certainly where it is, nor how long it will last, nor what sort of fire is there ; neither can they shew us how corporeal fire should work upon the souls in purgatory, they being spiritual and incorporeal ; they cannot tell us whether the pains of purgatory be at all times alike, neither can they tell us whether the good or evil angels are the tormentors of the souls in purgatory ; and as for the whipping, scalding, freezing of souls in purgatory, they are but 'old wives' fables,' and the brain-sick fancies of some deceitful persons, to cheat poor ignorant people of their money, under a blind pretence of praying their souls out of purgatory. Christ offered himself 'once for all,' Heb. x. 10, but the Romish priests offer him up daily in the mass, an unbloody sacrifice ; and so they do what lies in them to 'tread under foot the

¹ Surely that religion that loves to lap blood, and that is propagated and maintained by blood, and that prefers their own inventions and abominations before the blood and sufferings of Christ, that religion is not of God but such is the Romish religion—*ergo* their religion is not of God.

blood of God, the blood of the covenant,' Acts xx. 28 ; Heb. x. 29. To be short, Popery in effect is nothing else but an underhand, close witness-bearing against Christ in all his offices, and against all that he hath done and suffered for the redemption and salvation of sinners, as might be made abundantly evident, but that I may not now launch out into that ocean. I only give this brief touch by the way, that I might raise up in all your hearts a greater detestation of Popery, in this day wherein many are so warm for it, as if it were their only Diana. And let thus much suffice concerning the sufferings of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the improvement that we should make of them.

Thus you may clearly see, by what I have said concerning the active and passive obedience of our Lord Jesus Christ, that whatsoever we are bound to do or suffer by the law of God, all that did Christ do and suffer for us, as being our surety and mediator.¹ Now the law of God hath a double challenge or demand upon us ; one is of active obedience, in fulfilling what it requires ; the other is of passive obedience, in suffering that punishment which is due to us for the transgression of it, in doing what it forbids : for as we were created by God, we did owe unto him all obedience which he required ; and as we sinned against God, we did owe unto him a suffering of all that punishment which he threatened ; and we being fallen by transgression, can neither pay the one debt, nor yet the other. Of ourselves we can do nothing that the law requires ; neither can we so suffer as to satisfy God in his justice wronged by us, or to recover ourselves into life and favour again. And therefore Jesus Christ, who was God-man, did become our surety, and stood in our stead or room, and he did perform what we should but could not perform, and he did bear our sins and our sorrows, he did suffer and bear for us what we ourselves should have borne and suffered, whereby he did fully satisfy the justice of God, and made our peace, and purchased pardon and life for us. Christ did fully answer to all the demands of the law, he did come up to perfect and universal conformity to it. He did whatever the law enjoins, and he suffered whatever the law threatens. Christ, by his active and passive obedience, hath fulfilled the law most exactly and completely, Gal. iii. 13. As he was perfectly holy, he did what the law commanded, and as he was made a curse, he underwent what the law threatened ; and all this he did and suffered in our steads and as our surety. Whatever Christ did as our surety, he made it good to the full ; so that neither the righteous God, nor yet the righteous law, could ever tax him with the least defect. And this must be our great plea, our choice, our sweet, our safe, our comfortable, our acceptable plea, both in the day of our particular accounts when we die, and in the great day of our account, when a crucified Saviour shall judge the world. Although sin, as an act, be transient, yet in the guilt of it, it lies in the Lord's high court of justice, filed upon record against the sinner, and calling aloud for deserved punishment, saying, Man hath sinned, and man must suffer for sin ! But now Christ has suffered, that plea is taken off. Lo here, saith the Lord, the same nature that sinned, suffereth ; mine own

¹ A Christian's plea from the passive obedience of Christ. God did insist on it, that our surety should pay down the whole debt at once, and accordingly he did, Heb. x. 10, 12.

Son, being made flesh, hath suffered death for sin in the flesh; the thing is done, the law is satisfied, and so nonsuits the action, and casts it out of the court as unjust. Thus whereas sin would have condemned us, Christ hath condemned sin; he hath weakened, yea, nullified and taken away sin, in the guilt and condemning power of it, by that abundant satisfaction that he hath given to the justice of God by his active and passive obedience: so that, 'there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Jesus,' Rom. viii. 1, 3; for the blood of the mediator outcries the clamour of sin; and this must be a Christian's joy and triumph and plea in the great day of our Lord Jesus. As Christ was 'made sin for us,' 2 Cor. v. 21, so the Lord doth impute the sufferings of Christ to us—that is, he accepts of them on our behalf, and puts them upon our account; as if the Lord should say unto every particular believer, My Son was thy surety and stood in thy stead, and suffered and satisfied and took away thy sins by his blood, and that for thee: in his blood I find a ransom for thy soul; I do acknowledge myself satisfied for thee, and satisfied towards thee, and thou art delivered and discharged; I forgive thee thy sins, and am reconciled unto thee, and will save thee and glorify thee for my Son's sake; in his blood thou hast redemption, the forgiveness of thy sins. As when a surety satisfies the creditor for a debt, this is accounted to the debtor, and reckoned as a discharge to him in particular. I am paid and you are discharged, saith the creditor; so it is in this case; I am paid, saith God, and you are discharged, and I have no more to say to you but this, 'Enter into the joy of your Lord,' Mat. xxv. 21.

V. The fifth plea that you are to make in order to the ten scriptures in the margin,¹ that respects the account that you are to give up in the great day of the Lord, is drawn from the imputed righteousness of Christ to us. The justification of a sinner in the sight of God, upon the account of Christ's righteousness imputed to him, whereby the guilt of sin is removed, and the person of the sinner is accepted as righteous with the God of heaven, is that which I shall open to you distinctly in these following branches:—

1. First, *That the grace of justification in the sight of God is made up of two parts*—1. There is forgiveness of the offences committed against the Lord; 2. Acceptation of the person offending, pronouncing him a righteous person, and receiving him into favour again, as if he had never offended. This is most clear and evident in the blessed Scriptures.

[1.] First, *There is an act of absolution and acquittal from the guilt of sin, and freedom from the condemnation deserved by sin.* The desert of sin is an inseparable accident or concomitant of it, that can never be removed. It may be truly said of the sins of a justified person, that they deserve everlasting destruction; but justification is the freeing of a sinner from the guilt of his iniquity, whereby he was actually bound over to condemnation.² As soon as any man doth sin, there is a guilt

¹ Eccles. xi. 9, and xii. 14; Mat. xii. 14, and xviii. 23; Luke xvi. 3; Rom. xiv. 10; 2 Cor. v. 10; Heb. ix. 27, and xiii. 17; 1 Pet. iv. 5.

² Rom. viii. 1. *κατάκριμα*: It is a forensic word, relating to what is in use amongst men in their courts of judicature to condemn. It is the sentence of a judge decreeing a mulct or penalty to be inflicted upon the guilty person.

upon him, by which he is bound over to the wrath and curse of God ; and this guilt or obligation is inseparable from sin ; the sin doth deserve no less than everlasting damnation. Now, forgiveness of sin hath a peculiar respect to the guilt of sin, and removal of that. When the Lord forgives a man, he doth discharge him of that obligation by which he was bound over to wrath and condemnation : Rom. viii. 1, ' There is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Jesus ; ' ver. 33, ' Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect ? It is God that justifieth ; ' ver. 34, ' Who is he that condemneth ? It is Christ that died. ' Beloved, the Lord is a holy and just God ; and he ' reveals his wrath from heaven against all unrighteousness, ' Rom. i. 18 ; and there is a curse threatened to every transgression of the law, Gal. iii. 10 ; and when any man sinneth, he is obnoxious unto the curse, and God may inflict the same upon him, Rom. i. 32 ; but when God forgives sins, he therein doth interpose, as it were, between the sin and the curse, and between the obligation and the condemnation, Rom. vi. 23. When the sinner sins, God might say unto him, Sinner, by your sinning you are now fallen into my hands of justice ; and for your sins I may, according to my righteous law, condemn and curse you for ever ; but such is my free, my rich, my sovereign grace, that for Christ's sake I will spare you and pardon you, and that curse and condemnation which you have deserved shall never fall upon you. Oh, my bowels, my bowels, are yearning towards you, Jer. xxxi. 20 ; and therefore I will have mercy, mercy upon you, and will deliver your souls from going down into the pit, Job xxxiii. 13, 24, 28, 30. When the poor sinner is indicted and arraigned at God's bar, and process is made against him, and he found guilty of the violation of God's holy law, and accordingly judged guilty by God, and adjudged to everlasting death, then mercy steps in and pleads, I have found a ransom, Job xxxiii. 24 ; the sinner shall not die, but live. When the law saith, Ah, sinner, sinner ! thus and thus hast thou transgressed, all sorts of duties thou hast omitted, and all sorts of sins thou hast committed, and all sorts of mercies thou hast abused, and all sorts of means thou hast neglected, and all sorts of offers thou hast slighted ; then God steps in and saith, Ah, sinner, sinner ! what dost thou say, what canst thou say, to this heavy charge ? Is it true or false ?—wilt thou grant it or deny it ?—what defence or plea canst thou make for thyself ? Alas ! the poor sinner is speechless : Mat. xxii. 12, ἐφιδώθη, he was muzzled or haltered up, that is, he held his peace as though he had a bridle or a halter in his mouth. This is the import of the Greek word here used : he hath not one word to say for himself ; he can neither deny, nor excuse, or extenuate what is charged upon him. Why now, saith God, I must and do pronounce thee to be guilty ; and as I am a just and righteous God, I cannot but adjudge thee to die eternally. But such is the riches of my mercy, that I will freely justify thee through the righteousness of my Son ; I will forgive thy sins, and discharge thee of that obligation by which thou wast bound over to wrath, and curse, and condemnation ; so that the justified person may triumphingly say, ' Who is he that condemneth ? ' He may read over the most dreadful passages of the law without being terrified or amazed, as knowing that the curse is removed, and that all his sins, that brought him under the curse, are pardoned,

and are, in point of condemnation, as if they had never been. This is to be justified, to have the sin pardoned and the penalty remitted: Rom. iv. 5-8, 'But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, to whom God imputeth righteousness without works; saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.' It is observable that what David calleth forgiveness of sin, and not imputing of iniquity, St Paul styles a being justified. But,

[2.] Secondly, As the first part of justification consists in the pardon of sin, so the second part of justification consists *in the acceptation of the sinner's person as perfectly righteous in God's sight*, pronouncing him such, and dealing with him as such, and by bringing of him under the shadow of that divine favour which he had formerly lost by his transgressions: Cant. iv. 7, 'Thou art all fair, my love, and there is no spot in thee;' that is, none in my account, nor no such spots as the wicked are full of, Deut. xxxii. 5. Look, as David saw nothing in lame Mephibosheth but what was lovely, because he saw in him the features of his friend Jonathan, 2 Sam. ix. 3, 4, 13, 14, so God, beholding his people in the face of his Son, sees nothing amiss in them. They are all 'glorious within and without,' Ps. xlv. 13. Look, as Absalom had no blemish from head to foot, so they are irreprehensible and 'without blemish before the throne of God,' Rev. xiv. 5. The pardoned sinner, in respect of divine acceptation, is 'without spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing,' Eph. v. 26, 27. God accepts the pardoned sinner as complete in him who is the head of all principality and power, Col. ii. 10. Christ makes us comely through his beauty; he gives us white raiment to stand before the Lord. Christ is all in all in regard of divine acceptance: Eph. i. 6, 'He hath made us accepted in the beloved;' *ἐχαρίτωσεν ἡμᾶς*, 'he hath made us favourites,' so Chrysostom and Theophylact render it; 'God hath ingratiated us,' he hath made us gracious in the Son of his love. Through the blood of Christ we look of a sanguine complexion, ruddy and beautiful in God's eyes: Isa. lxii. 4, 'Thou shalt no more be termed forsaken, but thou shalt be called Hephzibah; for the Lord delighteth in thee.'¹ The acceptation of our persons with God takes in six things: (1.) God's honouring of us; (2.) His delight in us; (3.) His being well pleased with us; (4.) His extending love and favour to us; (5.) His high estimation of us; (6.) His giving us free access to himself. It is the observation of Ambrose, that though Jacob was not by birth the first-born, yet, hiding himself under his brother's clothes, and having put on his coat, which smelled most fragrantly, he came into his father's presence, and got away the blessing from his elder brother, Gen. xxvii. 36; so it is very necessary, in order to our acceptation with God, that we lie hid under the precious robe of Christ, our elder brother; that, having the sweet savour of his garments upon us, our sins may be covered with his perfections, and our unrighteousness with the robes of his righteousness,

¹ All persons out of Christ are cursed enemies, objects of God's wrath and justice, displeasing, offending, and provoking creatures; and therefore God cannot but loathe them and abhor them.

2 Cor. ii. 15; that so we may offer up ourselves unto God 'a living and acceptable sacrifice,' Rom. xii. 1; 'not having our own righteousness, which are but as filthy rags,' Isa. lxiv. 6; but that which is 'through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith,' Phil. iii. 9.

Thus you see that justification, for the nature of it, lies in the gracious pardon of the sinner's transgressions, and in the acceptance of his person as righteous in God's sight. But,

2. Secondly, In order to the partaking of this grace, of the forgiveness of our sins and the acceptance of our persons, *we must be able to produce a perfect righteousness before the Lord, and to present it and tender it unto him*; and the reason is evident from the very nature of God, who is 'of purer eyes than to behold iniquity,' Hab. i. 13, that is, with patience or pleasure, or without punishing it.¹ There are four things that God cannot do: (1.) He cannot lie; (2.) He cannot die; (3.) He cannot deny himself; (4.) He cannot behold iniquity with approbation and delight: Josh. xxiv. 19, 'And Joshua said unto the people, Ye cannot serve the Lord, for he is an holy God, he is a jealous God, he will not forgive your transgressions nor your sins:' such is the holiness of God's nature that he cannot behold sin, that he cannot but punish sin wherever he finds it, Ps. v. 4-6. God is infinitely, immutably, and inexorably just, as well as he is incomprehensibly gracious. Now, in the justification of a sinner God doth act as a God of justice, as well as a God of compassion. God is infinite in all his attributes, in his justice as well as in his mercy: these two cannot interfere. As justice cannot intrench upon mercy, so neither may mercy encroach upon justice; the glory of both must be maintained. Now, by the breach of the law the justice of God is wronged; so that although mercy be apt to pardon, yet justice requires satisfaction, and calls for vengeance on sinners. 'Every transgression must receive just recompense,' Heb. ii. 2, and God will not in any case absolve the guilty, Exod. xxxiv. 7: till this be done, the hands of mercy are tied that she cannot act. And seeing satisfaction could not be made to an infinite Majesty, but by an equal person and price; therefore the Son of God must become a curse for us, by taking our nature and pouring out his soul to the death; and by this means justice and mercy are reconciled and kiss each other, and mercy now being set at liberty, hath her free course to save poor sinners. God will have his justice satisfied to the full, and therefore Christ must bear all the punishment due to our sins; or else God cannot set us free, for he cannot go against his own just will. Observe the force of that phrase, 'Christ ought to suffer,' and 'thus it behoved Christ to suffer,' Luke xxiv. 26; Mat. xxvi. 54, 'Thus it must be.' Why must? but because it was, (1.) So decreed by God; (2.) Foretold by the prophets. Every particular of Christ's sufferings were foretold by the prophets, even to their very spitting in his face. (3.) Prefigured in the daily morning and evening sacrifice; this Lamb of God was sacrificed from the beginning of the world. A necessity then there was of our Saviour's sufferings; not a necessity of co-action, for he died freely and voluntarily, but of immutability and infallibility, for the former reasons mentioned, John

¹ Heb., 'And to look on iniquity thou canst not do it.'

x. 11, 14, 17, 18. An earthly prince that is just, holds himself bound to inflict punishment impartially upon the malefactor or his surety. It stands upon his honour; he saith, It must be so, I cannot do otherwise. This is true much more of God, who is justice itself. God, 'who is great in counsel and excellent in working,' had store of means at hand whereby to set free and recover lost mankind; yet he was pleased, in his infinite wisdom, to pitch upon this way of satisfaction, as being most agreeable to his holy nature, and most suitable to his high and sovereign ends—viz., man's salvation and his own glory: and that God doth stand upon full satisfaction, and will not forgive one sin without it, may be thus made evident.

[1.] First, *From the nature of sin, which is that 'abominable thing which God hates,'* Jer. xlv. 4.¹ The sinner deserves to die for his sins: Rom. vi. 23, 'The wages of sin is death.' Every sinner is worthy of death; 'they which commit such things are worthy of death,' Rom. i. 32. Now God is just and righteous. 'It is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you,' 2 Thes. i. 6; yea, and God did, therefore, 'set forth Christ to be a propitiation through faith in his blood,' Rom. iii. 25; 'to declare his righteousness, that he might be just,' ver. 26. Now, if God be a just and righteous God, then sin cannot absolutely escape unpunished; for it is just with God to punish the sinner who is worthy of punishment; and certainly God must deny himself if he will not be just, 2 Tim. ii. 13; but this he can never do. Sin is of an infinite guilt, and hath an infinite evil in the nature of it; and therefore no person in heaven or earth, but that person our Lord Jesus, who is God-man, and who had an infinite dignity, could either procure the pardon of it, or make satisfaction for it. No prayers, no cries, no tears, no humblings, no repentings, no resolutions, no reformatations, &c., can stop the course of justice, or procure the guilty sinner's pardon. It is Christ alone that can dissolve all obligations to punishment, and break all bonds and chains of guilt, and hand a pardon to us through his own blood, Eph. i. 7. We are set free by the blood of Christ. 'By the blood of thy covenant I have sent forth thy prisoners out of the pit,' Zech. ix. 11: it is by his blood that we are justified and saved from wrath: Rom. v. 9, 'Much more being justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath by him.' Pray tell me what is it to be justified but to be pardoned; and what is it to be saved from wrath but to be delivered from all punishment? and both these depend upon the blood of Christ, Eph. ii. 13; Col. i. 20. But,

[2.] *The veracity of God requires it.* Look, as God cannot but be just, so he cannot but be true; and if he cannot but be true, then he will make good the threatenings that are gone out of his mouth: Gen. ii. 17, 'In the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.' Heb. 'In dying, thou shalt die.' Death is a fall that came in by a fall, and without all peradventure every man should die the same day he was born, for 'the wages of sin is death,' and this wages should be presently paid, did not Christ reprieve poor sinners' lives for a season,²

¹ God could not, *salvo jure*, pass over the sin of man, so as absolutely to let it go unpunished.

² Under the name of death are comprehended all other calamities, miseries, and sorrows.

upon which account he is said to be the Saviour of all men, 1 Tim. iv. 10; not of eternal preservation, but of a temporal reservation. 'He will by no means clear the guilty,' Exod. xxxiv. 7. 'The soul that sinneth, it shall die;' 'The wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him,' Ezek. xviii. 20. 'He will render to every man according to his deeds,' Rom. ii. 6. O sirs, God can never so far yield as to abrogate his own law, and quietly to sit down with injury and loss to his own justice, himself having established a law, &c. The law pronounces him cursed that 'continues not in all things that are written therein, to do them,' Gal. iii. 10. Now, though the threatenings of men are frequently vain and frivolous, yet the threatenings of the great God shall certainly take place and have their accomplishment; though many ten thousand millions of sinners perish, not one tittle of the dreadful threatenings of God shall fail till all be fulfilled, Mat. v. 18. Josephus saith that from that very time that old Eli heard those terrible threatenings, that made their ears tingle and hearts tremble that heard them, Eli never ceased weeping, 1 Sam. iii. 11-14. Ah, who can look upon the dreadful threatenings that are pointed against sinners all over the book of God, and not tremble and weep! God cannot but in justice punish sinners; neither is it in his choice or freedom whether he will damn the obstinate impenitent sinner or no. Look, as God cannot but love holiness wherever he sees it, so he cannot but loathe and punish wickedness wherever he beholds it; neither will it stand with the infinite wisdom of God to admit of a dispensation or relaxation of the threatenings without satisfaction. God had passed a peremptory doom, and made a solemn declaration of it in his word, that 'he that sinneth, shall die the death;' and he will not, he cannot break his word. You know he had foreordained Jesus Christ, and set him forth to take upon himself this burden, to become a propitiation for sin through his blood, Rom. iii. 25; 1 Pet. i. 20, and made known his mind concerning it in his written word plainly, Isa. liii. 7. If we read the words, 'it is exacted or strictly required,' meaning the iniquity or punishment of us all, ver. 6.¹ It is required at his hands, he must answer it in our stead, and so he is afflicted, and this affliction reacheth even to the cutting him off, ver. 8. Therefore when Christ puts this work upon an *ought* and *must be*, he lays the weight of all on the Scriptures, 'Thus it is written,' as you may see in the texts lately cited; as if he should say, God hath spoken it, and his truth engageth him to see it done; so God hath threatened to punish sin, and his truth engageth him to see it done. O sirs, there is no standing before that God that is 'a consuming fire,' a just judge, a holy God, except I have one to 'undertake for me,' Heb. xii. 29, that is 'mighty to save,' Isa. lxiii. 1, and mighty to satisfy divine justice, and mighty to pacify divine wrath, and mighty to bear the threatenings, and mighty to forgive sin. When God forgives sin, he does it in a way of righteousness, Isa. xix. 20. 1 John i. 9, 'He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.' He doth not say he is merciful, but '*just*, to forgive us our sins;' because they are satisfied for, and God's justice will not let him demand the same debt twice, of the surety and of the debtor too. It

¹ Exigitur, as Junius and some others read it.

will never stand with the unspotted justice and righteousness of God to require such debts of us, which Christ, by shedding his most precious blood, hath discharged for us, Rom. iii. 25. Mark, the maledictory sentence of death, denounced by the law against sinners, was inflicted by God upon Christ. This is that which the prophet Isaiah positively asserts, where he saith, 'The chastisement,' that is, the punishment (called a chastisement, because inflicted by a father, and only for a time,) 'of our peace was upon him.' And again, 'He was oppressed, and he was afflicted,' Isa. liii. 5, 7; which, according to the genuine sense of the original, is better rendered, 'It was exacted'—to wit, the punishment of our sin; and he was afflicted, or he answered—to wit, to the demand of the penalty. The curse to which we are subject, saith Theodorus,¹ he assumed upon himself of his own accord. 'The death that was not due to him he underwent, that we might not undergo that death which was due to us,' saith Gregory.² 'He made himself a debtor for us, who were debtors; and therefore the creditor exacts it from him,' saith Arnoldus.³ Now God's justice being satisfied for our offences, it cannot but remit those offences to us. As the creditor cannot demand that of the debtor which the surety hath already paid, so neither can God exact the punishment of us which Christ hath suffered; and therefore 'it is just with God to forgive us our sins.' It will be altogether needless to inquire whether it had been injustice in God to forgive without satisfaction. St Austin's determination is very solid: There wanted not to God another possible way, and if it were unjust, it were impossible; but this of satisfaction was most agreeable to divine wisdom.⁴ Before God did decree this way, it might be free to have used it or not; but in decreeing, this seemed most convenient, and after, it became necessary, so that there can be no remission without it; and however it might not have been unjust with God to have forgiven without it, yet we are sure it is most just with him to forgive upon satisfaction.⁵ Indeed, the debt being paid by Christ, God's very justice, as I may say with reverence, would trouble him if he should not give in the bond, and give out an acquittance. The believing penitent sinner may, in a humble confidence, sue out his pardon, not only at the throne of grace, but at the bar of justice, in these or the like expressions: Lord, thou hast punished my sins in thy Son, wilt thou punish them in me? Thou hast accepted that suffering of thy Son as the punishment of my sin, therefore thou canst not in justice exact it of me, for this were to punish twice for one offence, which thy justice cannot but abhor. O sirs! God doth not pronounce men righteous when they are not; but first he makes them so, and then he pronounces them to be such; so that if a man will be justified, he must be able to produce such a complete righteousness wherewith he may stand before the justice of God. Ah sinners! the Lord is infinitely just, as well

¹ Theod. disp., l. xv. c. 5.

² Gregory Moral., l. iii. c. 13.

³ Arnold. de sep. verb., Tr. i.

⁴ Aug. de Trinit., l. xiii. c. 10.

⁵ When you are forgiven, you are then released, and for ever acquitted from any after-reckonings with the justice of God. Divine justice hath no more to say or do against you, for *remissa culpa, remittitur pœna*, If the fault be forgiven, then also is the punishment forgiven; nay, let me speak with a holy and humble reverence, God cannot in his justice punish when he hath pardoned.

as merciful; and if ever your sins be pardoned, it must be by an admirable temperment, or mixture of mercy and justice together. It was one of the great ends of the gospel dispensation that God might exalt his justice in the justification of a sinner: Rom. iii. 26, 'To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness, that he might be just, and the justifier of him that believeth in Jesus.' But,

3. Thirdly, The only matter of man's righteousness, since the fall of Adam, wherein he can appear with comfort before the justice of God, and consequently whereby alone he can be justified in his sight, is *the obedience and suffering of Jesus Christ, the righteousness of the mediator*. There is not any other way imaginable, how the justice of God may be satisfied, and we may have our sins pardoned in a way of justice, but by the righteousness of the Son of God; and therefore this is his name, 'Jehovah-Tsidkenu, the Lord our Righteousness,' Jer. xxiii. 6. 'This is his name,' that is, this is the prerogative of the Lord Jesus, a matter that appertaineth to him alone, to be able to 'bring in everlasting righteousness, and to make reconciliation for iniquity,' Dan. ix. 24. The costly cloak of Alcisthenes, which Dionysius sold to the Carthaginians for an hundred talents, was indeed a mean and beggarly rag to that embroidered mantle of Christ's righteousness that he puts upon us: Isa. lxi. 10, 'I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.'¹ Christ's righteousness is that garment of wrought gold, that we all need, to cover all our imperfections, and to render us perfectly beautiful and glorious in the sight of God.² In this robe of righteousness we are complete, we are without spot or wrinkle, we are without fault before the throne of God. Through the imputation of Christ's righteousness, we are made righteous in the sight of God. God looking upon us, as invested with the righteousness of his Son, accounts us righteous. All believers have a righteousness in Christ as full and complete as if they had fulfilled the law. 'Christ being the end of the law for righteousness to believers,' Rom. viii. 3, 4, invests believers with a righteousness every way as complete, as the personal obedience of the law would have invested them withal. When men had violated God's holy law, God in justice resolved that his law should be satisfied before man should be saved. Now this was done by Christ, who was the end of the law; he fulfilled it actively and passively, and so the injury offered to the law is recompensed. God had rather that all men should be destroyed, than that his law should not be satisfied. No man can perfectly be justified in the sight of God without a perfect righteousness, every way commensurable to God's holy law, which is the rule of righteousness, 'Do this and live:' neither can any person have any choice, spiritual, lively communion with a righteous God, till he be clothed with the righteousness of Jesus Christ. All Christ's active and passive obedience was either for himself, or in our stead and behalf; but it was not for himself, but

¹ It is a sign of great favour from the Great Turk, when a rich garment is cast upon any that come into his presence.—*Knolles Hist.* The application is easy.

² Ps. xlv. 13; Rom. v. 19; Col. ii. 10; Eph. v. 27; Rev. xiv. 5; Rom. iii. 21, 22, 25, 26.

for us, that he suffered and obeyed. Whatsoever Christ did or suffered in the whole course of his life, he did it and suffered it as our surety, and in our steads: for as God would not dispense with the penalty of the law without satisfaction, so he would not dispense with the commands of the law without perfect obedience. Remember, once for all, that the actions and sufferings of Christ make but up one entire and perfect obedience to the whole law; nor had Christ been a perfect and complete Saviour, if he had not performed what the law required, as well as suffered the penalty which the law inflicted. The imputation of Christ's righteousness to us is a gracious act of God the Father, according to his good will and pleasure, whereby as a judge he accounts believers' sins unto the surety, as if he had committed the same; and the righteousness of Christ unto the believer, as if he had performed the same, the same obedience that Christ did in his own person: so that Christ's imputed righteousness is as effectual to the full, for the acceptance of the believing sinner, as if he had yielded such obedience to the Lord himself. Hence his righteousness is called 'our righteousness,' Jer. xxiii. 6. Now without this righteousness there is no standing before the justice of God. But,

4. Fourthly, As this great design of Christ's redeeming sinners by his blood and sufferings, and by his being made a curse for them, doth sound aloud the glory of divine justice, and the glory of God's veracity, so it sounds forth *the glory of his wisdom; for hereby he maintains the authority of his righteous law.*¹ When a law is solemnly enacted, with a penalty in case of transgression, all those whom it concerns may conclude for certain, that the lawgiver will proceed accordingly; and it is a rule in policy, that laws once established and published, should be vigorously preserved. If the Lord should have wholly waived the execution of the law upon sinners or their surety, it might have tended greatly to the weakening of its authority, and the diminishing of the reverence of his sovereignty in the hearts of the sons of men. How often does God use that oath, 'As I live,' for the fulfilling of his threatenings as well as of his promises, Jer. xxii. 24, and Ezek. v. 9-11. The Lord Jehovah is as true, faithful, and constant in his threatenings as in his promises. What he hath threatened shall undoubtedly come to pass; he will be made known by his name Jehovah in the full execution of all his threatenings. The old world found it so, and Jerusalem found it so; yea, the whole nation of the Jews have found it so to this very day, see Ezek. v. 13, 15. Look, as all the saints in heaven will readily put to their seals, that God is true and faithful in all his promises; so all the damned in hell will readily put to their seals, that God is faithful in all his threatenings. Men frequently deride the laws and threatenings of great men, when they are not put into execution. It is the execution of laws that is the very life and soul of good laws, Eccles. viii. 11. Should God pardon sin, without exacting the penalty of the law, how would sinners be hardened, and emboldened to say, with those men, or rather monsters, in Malachi, 'Where is the God of judgment?' chap. ii. 17, *i.e.*, nowhere; either

¹ Solon, that wise lawmaker, could never find out a law to put all other good laws in execution; but such as are living laws, will make the laws to live: and will not the wise and living God make his laws and threatenings to live? Surely he will.

there is no God, or at least not a God of that exact, precise, and impartial judgment, as some men say and as others teach.¹ But now when God lets sinners see that he will not pardon sin without exacting the penalty of the law, either of the sinner or of his surety, then the sinner cries out, ‘O the depth of the riches, both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!’ Rom. xi. 33. God stood so much upon the complete satisfaction and accomplishment of his law, that he was willing that Christ should be a sacrifice, that the law might be satisfied in its penalty, and that Christ in his own person should fulfil the righteousness of the law, that it might be satisfied in its commands, Rom. viii. 3–5. Now in this plenary satisfaction made to the law, the wisdom of God does gloriously shine. The heart of God was so set upon a full satisfaction to his law, that rather than it should not be done, his own Son must come from heaven and put on flesh, and be himself made under the law, Gal. iv. 4, 5; he must live a holy life, and die a cursed death, and all to satisfy the law, and to keep up the authority of it. But,

5. Fifthly, God doth stand upon full satisfaction, and will not forgive one sin without it, that *he might hereby cut off all occasions, which the devil, his arch-enemy, might take to calumniate and traduce him*; for if God did not stand upon full satisfaction, the devil might accuse him (1.) of inconstancy and changeableness, that having threatened death to transgressors, he did quite forget himself, in waiving the threatening, and dispensing wholly with his law, by granting them free remission; yea, (2.) of partiality and respect of persons, that he should be so easy and forbearing, as to let them pass without any punishment at all; having been formerly so severe and rigid against himself, in casting him and his angels down to hell, and keeping them in everlasting flames and chains of darkness, without the least hope of recovery, 2 Pet. ii. 4; Jude 6. Satan might say, Lord, thou mightest have spared me as well as man. But the Lord can now answer, Man hath made satisfaction, he hath borne the curse, and thereby fully discharged all the demands of the law; if he had not, I would no more have spared him than thee. Ambrose brings in the devil boasting against Christ, and challenging Judas as his own; he is not thine, Lord Jesus, he is mine, his thoughts beat for me; he eats with thee, but is fed by me; he takes bread from thee, but money from me; he drinks with thee, but sells thy blood to me. Had God pardoned sin without satisfaction, ah how would Satan have boasted and triumphed over God himself! But,

6. Sixthly, God’s standing upon full satisfaction, and his not forgiving one sin without it, bears *a visible character of his goodness and loving-kindness*, as well as it sounds out aloud the glory of divine justice. ‘The great and the holy God, whose name is holy,’ Exod. xv. 1, 11, might have rigorously exacted the penalty of the law on the persons of sinners themselves; but he hath so far dispensed with his own law, as to admit of a surety, by whom the end of the law, that is, the manifestation of his justice and hatred of sin, might be fulfilled, and yet a considerable part of mankind might be preserved from the jaws of the second death, which otherwise must unavoidably have

¹ Such an emphasis there is in the Hebrew, as Corn. à Lapeire observes.

perished to all eternity, Rev. xx. 6. God seems to speak at such a rate as this; I may not, I will not, suffer this high affront of Adam and his posterity against my 'holy and righteous law,' Rom. vii. 12, 14, whereby the honour both of my justice and truth is in danger to be trampled underfoot; and yet if I should let out all my wrath upon them, they were never able to stand under it, but 'their spirits would fail before me, and the souls that I have made,' Ps. lxxviii. 38; Isa. lvii. 16. I will therefore let out all my wrath upon their surety, and he shall bear it for them, that they may be delivered; and thus the Lord 'in wrath remembers mercy,' Hab. iii. 2. But,

7. Seventhly, We can receive no benefit by the righteousness of Christ for justification in the sight of God, nor can we be pardoned and accepted thereupon, *until that righteousness become ours, and be made over unto us.* How can we plead this righteousness before God, except we have an interest in this righteousness? Isa. xlv. 24, 25. How can we rejoice and triumph in this righteousness, if this righteousness be not made ours? How can we have peace with God, and boldness at the throne of grace, through this righteousness, except we can lay claim to this righteousness? How can we conclude that we are happy and blessed upon the account of this righteousness, except it be made over to us? ¹ There is none of us that have such an inherent righteousness in ourselves that we dare plead before the bar of God; and though God hath provided such a glorious robe of righteousness for poor sinners, as is the wonder and amazement of angels, yet what would all this avail the poor sinner, if this righteousness be not made over to him? O sirs! remember this, Christ's righteousness must be yours, it must be made over to you, or else it will never stand you in stead: Rom. v. 17, 'For if by one man's offence, death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousness, shall reign in glory by one, Jesus Christ.' Except they receive the righteousness of Christ, it is nothing to them. Christ's righteousness is in itself white raiment, and beautiful and glorious apparel; but it will never cover our nakedness, except it be put on, and we are clothed with it. It must be made over to us, or we can never be justified by it: 1 Cor. i. 30, 'He of God is made to us righteousness;' if he be not made to us righteousness, we shall never be righteous. Though man hath lost a righteousness to be justified by, yet there is an absolute necessity of having one. God cannot love nor delight in anything but righteousness. God is a holy God, a righteous God, and therefore can only love and take pleasure in those that are righteous, both by a righteousness imputed, and a righteousness imparted: Isa. xlv. 24, 'Surely, shall one say, in the Lord have I righteousness and strength;' ver. 25, 'In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory:' Isa. liv. 17, 'Their righteousness is of me, saith the Lord:' Ps. lxxi. 16, 'I will make mention of thy righteousness, even of thine only.' Look, as no man can be made rich by another man's riches, except they are made his; so no man

¹ 2 Cor. ii. 14; Gal. vi. 14; Rom. v. 1; Heb. iv. 15, 16; Ps. xxxii. 1, 2; Rom. iv. 7-11; Rom. iv. 3. If Christ's obedience be imputed to us, it must be so imputed as to be our righteousness before God; no imputation below this will serve our turns, cheer our hearts, and save our souls. Rev. xiv. 8; Isa. lxiii. 1; Rev. iii. 18.

can be made righteous by the righteousness of Christ, except his righteousness be made over to him; hence he is called, 'The Lord our Righteousness,' Jer. xxiii. 6; and hence we are said to be 'the righteousness of God in him,' 2 Cor. v. 21; hence we are said 'by his obedience to be made righteous,' 2 Cor. v. 21.

8. Eighthly and lastly, The way whereby this righteousness of God's providing is conveyed and made over to us, that we may receive the benefit thereof, and be justified thereby, *it is by way of imputation*. The meaning is this: God doth reckon the righteousness of Christ unto his people, as if it were their own; he doth count unto them Christ's sufferings and satisfaction, and makes them partakers of the virtue thereof, as if themselves had suffered and satisfied. This is the genuine and proper import of the word *imputation*, when that which is personally done by one, is accounted and reckoned to another, and laid upon his score, as if he had done it.¹ Thus it is in this very case; we sinned and fell short of the glory of God, and became obnoxious to the vindictive justice of God; and the Lord Jesus Christ, by his obedience and death, hath given full content and satisfaction to divine justice on our behalf. Now when God doth pardon and accept us hereupon, he doth put it upon our account, he doth reckon or impute it unto us as fully, in respect of the benefit thereof, as if we ourselves had performed it in our own persons; and this is the way wherein the Holy Ghost frequently expresseth it: Rom. iv. 6, 'Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works;' and ver. 11, 'That righteousness might be imputed to them also;' and therefore it highly concerns us to mind this scripture rule, that in order to the satisfaction of the justice of God, the sins of God's people were imputed and reckoned unto Christ; and in order to our partaking of the benefit of that satisfaction, or deliverance thereby, Christ's righteousness must be imputed and reckoned unto us. The first branch of this rule you have, Isa. liii. 5, 6, 'He was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities,' &c., and 'the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all;' and for the other branch of the rule, see Rom. v. 19, 'As by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous;' ver. 17, 'As by one man's offence death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousness, shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.' From the comparison between the first and second Adam, it is evident that as Adam's transgression of the law of God is imputed to all his posterity, and that in respect thereof they are reputed sinners, and accursed and liable to eternal death; so also Christ's obedience, whereby he fulfilled the law, is so imputed to the members of his mystical body, that in regard of God, they stand as innocent, justified and accepted to eternal life. Look, as Adam was the common root of all mankind, and so his sin is imputed to all his posterity, so Jesus Christ is the common root of all the faithful, and his obedience is imputed to them all; for

¹ Rom. iii. 21, and Isa. liii. Imputed righteousness seems to be prefigured by the skins wherewith the Lord, after the fall, clothed our first parents. The bodies of the beasts were for sacrifice, and the skins, to put them in mind that their own righteousness was like the fig leaves, imperfect, and that therefore they must be justified another way.

it were ridiculous to say that Adam's sin had more power to condemn, than Christ's righteousness hath to save; and who but fools in folio will say that God doth not impute Christ's righteousness, as well as Adam's sin? The apostle's parallel between the two Adams does clearly evidence that as the guilt of Adam's disobedience is really imputed to us, insomuch that in his sinning we all sin; so the obedience of Christ is as really imputed unto us, insomuch that in his obeying, reputatively and legally we obey also. How did Adam's sin become ours? Why, by way of imputation. He transgressed the covenant, and did eat the forbidden fruit, and it was justly reckoned unto us. It was personally the sinful act of our first parent, but it is imputed to all of us who come out of his loins; for we were in him not only naturally, as he was the root of mankind, but also legally, as he was the great representative of mankind.¹ In the covenant of works, and the transactions thereof, Adam stood in the stead, and acted in the behalf, not only of himself, but of all his posterity, and therefore his sin is reckoned unto them; even so, saith the apostle, after the same manner, the obedience and righteousness of Christ is made over to many for justification. I cannot understand the analogy betwixt the two Adams, wherein the apostle is so clear and full, unless this imputation, as here stated, be granted. Look, as Christ was made sin for us only by imputation, so we are made righteous only by the imputation of his righteousness to us, as the Scripture everywhere evidences, 1 Pet. ii. 22; 2 Cor. v. 21, 'He hath made him to be sin for us who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.' How was Christ made sin for us? Not sin inherent, for he had no sin in him; he was 'holy, harmless, and undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens,' Heb. vii. 26; but by imputation. Christ's righteousness is imputed to us in that way wherein our sin was imputed to him. Now our sin was imputed to Christ, not only in the bitter effects of it, but he took the guilt of them upon himself, as I have in this treatise already evidenced; so, then, his righteousness or active obedience itself must be proportionably imputed to us, and not only in the effects thereof. The mediatory righteousness of Christ can no way become the believer's, but as the first Adam's disobedience became his posterity's, who never had the least actual share in his transgression; that is, by an act of imputation from God as a judge. The Lord Jesus having fulfilled the law as a second Adam, God the Father imputeth it to the believing soul, as if he had done it in his own person. I do not say that God the Father doth account the sinner to have done it, but I say that God the Father doth impute it to the believing sinner, as if he had done it, unto all saving intents and purposes. Hence Christ is called 'the Lord our Righteousness,' Jer. xxiii. 6. An awakened soul, that is truly sensible of his own baseness and unrighteousness, would not have this golden sentence, 'The Lord our Righteousness,' blotted out by a hand of heaven out of the Bible, for as many worlds as there are men in the world. So is that text to a believer, living and dying, a strong cordial, viz., 1 Cor. i. 30, 'Christ Jesus is made unto

¹ Gen. iii. 6, 11, 12. As imitation of Adam only made us not sinners, so imitation of Christ only makes us not righteous, but the imputation,—Down[ame]—of Justification.

us of God wisdom, righteousness,' &c.¹ And pray how is Christ made righteousness to the believer? Not by infusion, but imputation; not by putting righteousness into him, but by putting a righteousness upon him, even his own righteousness, by the imputing his merits, his satisfaction, his obedience unto them, through which they are accepted as righteous unto eternal life, Rom. v. 19. Christ's righteousness is his in respect of inhesion, but it is ours in respect of imputation; his righteousness is his personally, but ours meritoriously; we are justified by another's righteousness, and that only, and therefore by imputed righteousness; for another's righteousness can no other way be made ours, but only by imputation: Rom. v. 18, 'By the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men to justification.' Were it any other than imputed righteousness, it would be as manifold a righteousness as there are persons justified; but it is said to be 'the righteousness of one, that comes upon all men for justification of life.' That is a choice word that you have in Rev. xix. 8, 'And to her,' that is, Christ's spouse, 'was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints.' The Greek word here is *δικαιώματα*, 'righteousnesses' or 'justifications.' This, say some, signifieth a double righteousness given to us—(1.) The righteousness of justification, whereby we are justified before God; (2.) The righteousness of sanctification, by which we evidence our justification to men. But others say it is a Hebrewism rather, by the plural righteousnesses noting the most absolute, complete, and perfect righteousness which we have in Christ.² Now though I would not exclude inherent righteousness, yet I judge that imputed righteousness is the righteousness here meant; and that, (1.) Because this clothing is that which is the righteousness of all saints, by which they stand *recti in curia* before God. Now there is no standing before God in our inherent righteousness; for though, next to Christ, our graces are our best jewels, yet they are but weak and imperfect, they have their specks and spots, they are like the moon, which, when it shines brightest, yet has her black spots.³ (2.) Christ's righteousness is the only pure, clean, white, spotless righteousness. There is no speck or spot to be found upon Christ's righteousness; but 'we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags,' as that evangelical prophet speaks, Isa. lxiv. 6, 3. The word here is plural, *δικαιώματα*, 'righteousnesses.' Christ hath many righteousnesses—*first*, He hath his essential and personal righteousness as God. Now this essential personal righteousness of Christ cannot be imputed to us. Osiander was of opinion that men were justified by the essential righteousness of Christ as God, which was a most dangerous opinion, and learnedly and largely confuted by Calvin in his Institutions,⁴ and by others since; *secondly*,

¹ In this 1 Cor. i. 30, the apostle (1.) distinguisheth righteousness from sanctification, imputed righteousness from inherent righteousness; (2.) he saith that Christ's righteousness is made ours of God. See Rom. iv. 6; Ps. lxxi. 16.

² So the Hebrew word is used, Isa. xlv. 24.

³ Ps. lxxvi. 7, and cxliii. 2; Job ix. 15, xxii. 2-4, and xxxv. 7. The saints are said (Rev. vii. 15) to be clothed in white robes, not because they had merited, or adorned themselves with good works, but because they had washed and made white their robes in the blood of the Lamb.

⁴ i. 15, 3, 5. ii. 12, 5-7. iii. 11, 5.—G.

There is the mediatory righteousness of Christ. Now this is that righteousness which he wrought for us as mediator, whereby he did subject himself to the precepts, to the penalties, commands and curses, answering both God's vindictive and rewarding justice. There is Christ's active righteousness, and there is Christ's passive righteousness, &c. Of these I have spoken already in this treatise, and therefore a hint here is enough; but, *thirdly*, There are some expressions in the text that is under consideration that do best agree with the righteousness of Christ; as *first* that, that 'she is arrayed in fine linen, clean and white.'¹ This clearly points at imputed righteousness, which Christ puts upon his bride as a royal robe. That which makes Christ's bride beautiful, yea, whiter than the snow, and more glorious than the sun in his eyes, is not any beauty of her own, nor any inherent righteousness in herself, but the white robe of Christ's own righteousness that he puts upon her; *second*, that expression in the text, 'to her it was granted, that she should be arrayed in fine linen,' &c. 'It was granted to her,' to shew that this fine linen was none of her own spinning, it was a free gift of Christ unto her. Saints have no other righteousness, to make them comely and lovely in the eyes of God, but the robe of Christ's righteousness, which is that fine white linen that Christ gives them, and that he puts upon them; *lastly*, observe the confirmation and ratification that is given to these words in the 9th verse, 'Write, these are the true sayings of God.' These are not my sayings, nor the sayings of angels, but they are the sayings of that God that is truth itself, that cannot die, nor lie, nor deny himself, nor deceive the sons of God; and therefore you may safely rest upon these sayings of God, both in the 8th and 9th verses, as most sure and certain. Surely the righteousness the believer hath is imputed; it is an accounted or reckoned righteousness to him; it is not that which he hath inherently in himself, but God through Christ doth esteem of him as if he had it, and so deals with him as wholly righteous—(1.) It stands with reason that that satisfaction should be imputed to me, which my surety hath made for my debt. Now Christ was our surety, as the apostle calls him, Heb. vii. 22. (2.) Adam's sin was justly imputed by God to all his posterity, though it was not their own inherently and actually, as the apostle tells us, Rom. v. 14; and the sins of all the elect were imputed unto Christ, though they were not his own inherently and actually. 'He made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin,' saith the apostle, 2 Cor. v. 21; and 'upon him was laid the iniquity of us all,'² Isa. liii. 6. All the sins of all the believers in the world, from the first creation to the last judgment, were laid on him. How laid on him but by imputation? Surely there was in Christ no fundamental guilt! No, no; but he was made sin by imputation and law-account; he was our surety, and so our sins were laid on him in order to punishment. And to prefigure this, all the

¹ How can it stand with reason that the Papists by the Pope's indulgences should be made partakers of the merits and good works one of another, and yet be against reason that we by the ordinance of God should be made partakers of the merits and righteousness of Jesus Christ?

² This must be Luther's meaning when he saith, Christ was the greatest sinner; he was Manasseh that idolater, David that adulterer, Peter that denier of his Master, &c., to wit, by imputation only, he being made sin for them, as the apostle speaks.

iniquities of God's people were imputed to their sacrifice, though they were not inherently his own, as we read, Lev. xvi. 21, 22, 'Aaron shall put all the iniquities of all the children of Israel, and all their transgressions, and all their sins, upon the head of the goat; and the goat shall bear upon him all their iniquities.' And why then should it seem strange that the perfect righteousness of our sacrifice and surety, though it be not our own inherently, should be imputed to us by the Lord and made ours?¹

Frequently and seriously consider that the word answering this imputing is in the Hebrew *Chashab*, and in the Greek λογίζεσθαι, of which the sum, as the learned say, comes to this, that though the words in the general signify to think, to reason, to imagine, &c., yet very frequently they are used to signify to account or reckon, by way of computation, as arithmeticians use to do, so that it is, as it were, a judgment passed upon a thing when all reasons and arguments are cast together. And from this it is applied to signify any kind of accounting or reckoning; and in this sense imputation is taken here for God's esteeming and accounting of us righteous; שׁוּב, signifies to reckon or account. It is taken by a borrowed speech from merchants' reckonings and accounts, who have their debt-books, wherein they set down how their reckonings stand in the particulars they deal in. Now, in such debt-books merchants use to set down whatever payments are only made, either by the debtors themselves, or by others in the behalf of them; an example whereof we have in the Epistle of Philemon, ver. 18, where Paul undertakes to Philemon for Onesimus, 'If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee anything, put that on my account;' that is, account Onesimus his debt to Paul, and Paul's satisfaction or payment to Onesimus, which answers the double imputation in point of justification; that is, of our sins to Christ, and of Christ's satisfaction to us, Ps. xxxii. 1, 2; both which are implied, 2 Cor. v. 21, 'He made him to be sin for us;' that is, our sins were imputed to him, 'that we might be the righteousness of God in him;' that is, that his righteousness might be imputed to us. The language of Jesus Christ to his Father seems to be this, O holy Father, I have freely and willingly taken all the debts and all the sins of all the believers in the world upon me; I have undertaken to be their paymaster, to satisfy thy justice, to pacify thy wrath, to fulfil thy law, &c., and therefore, lo, here I am, ready to do whatever thou commandest, and ready to suffer whatsoever thou pleasest; I am willing to be reckoned a sinner, that they may be reckoned righteous; I am willing to be accounted cursed, that they may be for ever blessed; I am willing to pay all their debts, that they may be set at liberty; I am willing to lay down my life, that they may escape the second death; I am willing that my soul should be exercised with the most hideous agonies, that their souls may be possessed of heaven's happinesses, Ps. xl. 6-8; Heb. x. 4-9; John x. 11, 15, 17, 18; Rev. xx. 6. Oh, what wonderful wisdom, grace, and love is here manifested! that when we were neither able to satisfy the penalty of the law, or to bring a con-

¹ To impute in the general, is to acknowledge that to be another's which is not indeed his; and it is used either in a good or bad sense, so that it is no more than to account or reckon. It is the righteousness of Christ imputed to us, and accepted for us, by which we are judged righteous.

formity to it, that then Christ should interpose, and become both redemption and righteousness for us !

Now, from the imputed righteousness of Christ, a believer may form up this fifth plea, as to all the ten scriptures in the margin, that refer to the great day of account:¹ *O blessed God, thou hast given me to understand that the mediatory righteousness of Christ includes, first, the habitual holiness of his person, in the absence of all sin, and in the rich and plentiful presence of all holy and requisite qualities ; secondly, the actual holiness of his life and death by obedience. By his active obedience he perfectly fulfilled the commands of the law, and by his passive obedience, his voluntary sufferings, he satisfied the penalty and commination of the law for transgressions, that perfect satisfaction to divine justice, in whatsoever it requires, either in way of punishing for sin, or obedience to the law, made by the Lord Jesus Christ, God and man, the mediator of the new covenant, as a common head, representing all those whom the Father hath given to him, and made over unto them that believe in him; this is that righteousness that is imputed to all believers in their justification, and this imputed righteousness of thy dear Son and my dear Saviour is now my plea before thy bar of justice.* Imputed righteousness is the same materially with that which the law requireth. It is obedience to the law of God, exactly and punctually performed, to the very utmost *iota* and tittle thereof. Without the least abatement, Christ hath paid the uttermost farthing. He is the fulfilling of the law for righteousness, and he hath fulfilled the law in the human nature, to the intent that it might be fulfilled in the same nature to which it was at first given ; and all this he hath expressly done in all their names, and on all their behalfs, that believe in him, ‘ that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in them,’ Rom. viii. 3, 4.² It is as if our dear Lord Jesus had said, O blessed Father, this I suffer, and this I do, to the use and in the stead and room of all those that have ventured their souls upon me, that they may have a righteousness which they may truly call their own, and on which they may safely rest, and in which they may for ever glory, Isa. xlv. 24, 25. Now it will never stand with the unspotted holiness, justice, and righteousness of God, to reject this righteousness of his Son, or that plea that is bottomed upon it. Oh, the matchless happiness of believers, who have so fair, so full, and so noble a plea to make in the great day of our Lord Jesus !

Quest. But some may say, *What blessed fruit grows upon this glorious tree of paradise—viz., the righteousness of Jesus Christ, that is imputed to all believers? What strong consolations flows from this fountain, the imputed righteousness of our Lord Jesus Christ?* I answer, there are these nine choice consolations, that flow in upon all believers, through the righteousness of Christ imputed to them:—

1. First, Let all believers know for their comfort, that in this imputed righteousness of Christ *there is enough to satisfy the justice of*

¹ Eccles. xi. 9, and xii. 14; Mat. xii. 14, and xviii. 23; Luke xvi. 3; Rom. xiv. 10; 2 Cor. v. 10; Heb. ix. 27, and xiii. 17; 1 Pet. iv. 5.

² The righteousness which the law requireth, upon pain of damnation, is a perfect obedience and conformity to the whole law of God, performed by every son and daughter of Adam in his own person. Now imputed righteousness is the same materially with that which the law requireth.

God to the uttermost furthering, and to take off all his judicial anger and fury. The mediatory righteousness of Christ is so perfect, so full, so exact, so complete, and so fully satisfactory to the justice of God, as that divine justice cries out, I have enough, and I require no more; I have found a ransom, and I am fully pacified towards you, Ezek. xvi. 61-63; Heb. x. 10-12, 14; Isa. liii. 4-6. It is certain that Christ was truly and properly a sacrifice for sin; and it is as certain that our sins were the meritorious cause of his sufferings. He did put himself into poor sinners' stead, he took their guilt upon him, and did undergo that punishment which they should have undergone; he did die, and shed his blood, that he might thereby atone God and expiate sin, Rom. v. 6-12; and therefore we may safely and boldly conclude, that Jesus Christ hath satisfied the justice of God to the uttermost; so that now the believing sinner may rejoice and triumph in the justice as well as in the mercy of God, Heb. vii. 25; for doubtless the mediatory righteousness of Christ was infinitely more satisfactory and pleasing to God, than all the sins of believers could be displeasing to him. God took more pleasure and delight in the bruising of his Son, in the humiliation of his Son, and he smelt a sweeter savour in his sacrifice, than all our sins could possibly offend him or provoke him, Isa. liii. 10. When a believer casts his eyes upon his many thousand sinful commissions and omissions, no wonder if he fears and trembles; but then, when he looks upon Christ's satisfaction, he may see himself acquitted, and rejoice; for if there be no charge, no accusation against the Lord Jesus, there can be none against the believer, Rom. viii. 33-37. Christ's expiatory sacrifice hath fully satisfied divine justice; and upon that very ground every believer hath cause to triumph in Christ Jesus, and in that righteousness of his by which he stands justified before the throne of God, 2 Cor. ii. 14; Rev. xiv. 4, 5. Christ is a person of infinite, transcendent worth and excellency, and it makes highly for his honour to justify believers, in the most ample and glorious way imaginable, &c.; and what way is that, but by working out for [them], and then investing them with, a righteousness adequate to the law of God; a righteousness that should be every way commensurate to the miserable estate of fallen man, and to the holy design of the glorious God. It is the high honour of the second Adam that he hath restored to fallen man a more glorious righteousness than that he lost in the first Adam; and it would be high blasphemy, in the eyes of angels and men, for any mortal to assert that the second Adam, our Lord Jesus Christ, was less powerful to save, than the first Adam was to destroy. The second Adam is 'able to save to the uttermost all such as come to God through him,' Heb. vii. 25. The second Adam is able to save to all ends and purposes perfectly, saith Beza; perpetually, or for ever, saith Tremellius; *in æternum*, saith Syrus; *in perpetuum*, saith the Vulg.; *ad plenum*, saith Erasmus; *ad perfectum*, saith Stapulensis.¹ He is able to save to the uttermost obligation of the law, preceptive, as well as penal; and to bring in perfect righteousness, as well as perfect innocency. He is able to save to the uttermost demand of divine justice, by that perfect satisfaction that he has given to

¹ εἰς τὸ παντελές, 'to the uttermost' of time, at all times, and for ever, &c.

divine justice. 'Christ is mighty to save,' Isa. lxiii. 1; and as he is mighty to save, so he loves to save poor sinners, in such a way wherein he may most magnify his own might; and therefore he will purchase their pardon with his blood, 1 Pet. i. 18, 19, and make reparation to divine justice for all the wrongs and injuries which fallen man had done to his Creator and his royal law; and bestow upon him a better righteousness than that which Adam lost; and bring him into a more safe, high, honourable, and durable estate than that which Adam fell from when he was in his created perfection. All the attributes of God do acquiesce in the imputed righteousness of Christ, so that a believer may look upon the holiness, justice, and righteousness of God, and rejoice, and lay himself down in peace, Ps. iv. 8. I have read in story, that Pilate being called to Rome, to give an account unto the emperor for some misgovernment and mal-administration, he put on the seamless coat of Christ; and all the time that he had that coat upon his back, Cæsar's fury was abated. Christ has put his coat, his robe of righteousness, upon every believer, Isa. lxi. 10; upon which account all the judicial anger, wrath, and fury of God towards believers ceaseth: Isa. liv. 9, 'For this is as the waters of Noah unto me: for as I have sworn that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth; so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with thee, nor rebuke thee.' Ver. 10, 'For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee.' But,

2. Secondly, Know for your comfort, that this imputed, this mediatory righteousness of Christ *takes away all your unrighteousness*. It cancels every bond; it takes away all iniquity, and answers for all your sins, Isa. liii. 5-7; Col. ii. 12-15. Lord, here are my sins of omission, and here are my sins of commission; but the righteousness of Christ hath answered for them all. Here are my sins against the law, and here are my sins against the gospel, and here are my sins against the offers of grace, the tenders of grace, the strivings of grace, the bowels of grace; but the righteousness of Christ hath answered for them all. I have read that when a cordial was offered to a godly man that was sick, Oh, said he, the cordial of cordials which I daily take is, 'that the blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all our sins,' 1 John i. 7. O sirs! it would be high blasphemy for any to imagine that there should be more demerit in any sin, yea, in all sin, to condemn a believer, than there is merit in Christ's righteousness to absolve him, to justify him, Rom. viii. 1, 33-35. The righteousness of Christ was shadowed out by the glorious robes and apparel of the high priest, Exod. xxx. That attire in which the high priest appeared before God, what was it else but a type of Christ's righteousness? The filthy garments of Joshua, who represented the church, were not only taken off from him, thereby signifying the removal of our sins, Zech. iii. 4, 5; but also a new, fair garment was put upon him, to signify our being clothed with the wedding-garment of Christ's righteousness. If any shall say, How is it possible that a soul that is defiled with the worst of sins should be whiter than the snow, yea, beautiful and glorious in the eyes of God? Ps. li. 7. The answer is

at hand, because to whomsoever the Lord doth give the pardon of his sins, which is the first part of our justification, to them he doth also impute the righteousness of Christ, which is the second part of our justification before God. Thus David describeth, saith the apostle, 'the blessedness of the man to whom the Lord imputeth righteousness without works; saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered,' Rom. iv. 6, 7. Now to that man whose sins the Lord forgives, to him he doth impute righteousness also: 'Take away the filthy garments from him,' saith the Lord of Joshua; 'and he said unto him, Behold, I have caused thine iniquity to pass from thee, and I will clothe thee with change of raiment,' Zech. iii. 4. And what was that change of raiment? Surely the perfect obedience and righteousness of the Lord Jesus, which God doth impute unto us; in which respect also we are said, by justifying faith, to put on the Lord Jesus, Rom. xiii. 14; and to be clothed with him as with a garment, Gal. iii. 27. And no marvel if, being so apparelled, we appear beautiful and glorious in the sight of God: 'To her,' that is, Christ's bride, 'was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white, for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints,' Rev. xix. 8. This perfect righteousness of Christ, which the Lord imputeth to us, and wherewith, as with a garment, he clotheth us, is the only righteousness which the saints have to stand before God with; and having that robe of righteousness on, they may stand with great boldness and comfort before the judgment-seat of God. But,

3. Thirdly, Know for your comfort, that this righteousness of Christ *presents us perfectly righteous in the sight of God*. 'He is made to us righteousness,' 1 Cor. i. 30. The robe of innocency, like the veil of the temple, is rent asunder; our righteousness is a ragged righteousness, our righteousnesses are as filthy rags, Isa. lxiv. 4. Look, as under rags the naked body is seen, so under the rags of our righteousnesses the body of death is seen. Christ is all in all in regard of righteousness: Christ is 'the end of the law for righteousness to them that believe,'¹ Rom. x. 4.

That is, through Christ we are as righteous as if we had satisfied the law in our own persons. The end of the law is to justify and save those which fulfil it. Christ subjected himself thereto; he perfectly fulfilled it for us, and his perfect righteousness is imputed to us. Christ fulfilled the moral law, not for himself, but for us; therefore Christ doing it for believers, they fulfil the law in Christ. And so Christ by doing, and they believing in him that doth it, do fulfil the law; or Christ may be said to be the end of the law, because the end of the law is perfect righteousness, that a man may be justified thereby, which end we cannot attain of ourselves, through the frailty of our flesh; but by Christ we attain it, who hath fulfilled the law for us. Christ hath perfectly fulfilled the decalogue for us, and that three ways: (1.) In his pure conception; (2.) In his godly life; (3.) in his holy and obedient sufferings; and all for us. For whatsoever the law required that we should be, do, or suffer, he hath performed in our behalf. Therefore one wittily saith, (Aretius,) that Christ is *τελος*, the end or tribute; and we by his payment *ἀτελεως*, tribute-free. We

¹ Finis perficiens, non interficiens.—*Augustine*.

are discharged by him before God. Christ, in respect of the integrity and purity of his nature, being conceived without sin, Mat. i. 18; and in respect of his life and actions, being wholly conformed to the absolute righteousness of the law, Luke i. 35; and in respect of the punishment which he suffered, to make satisfaction unto God's justice for the breach of the law, 2 Cor. v. 21; Col. i. 20,—in these respects Christ is the perfection of the law, and 'the end of the law for righteousness to them that believe.' Jacob got the blessing in the garment of his elder brother; so in the garment of Christ's righteousness, who is our elder brother, we obtain the blessing; yea, 'all spiritual blessings in heavenly places,' Eph. i. 4. We are made 'the righteousness of God in him,' 2 Cor. v. 21. The church, saith Marorate, which puts on Christ, and his righteousness, is more illustrious than the air is by the sun. The infinite wisdom and power of dear Jesus in reconciling the law and the gospel, in this great mystery of justification, is greatly to be magnified. In the blessed Scriptures we find the righteousness of justification to take its various denominations. In respect of the material cause, it is called the righteousness of the law, Rom. v. 17; in respect of the efficient cause, it is called the righteousness of Christ, 1 Cor. i. 30; in respect of the formal, it is called the righteousness of God, he imputing of it, Rom. iii. 22; in respect of the instrumental cause, it is called the righteousness of faith, Phil. iii. 9; and in respect of the moving and final cause, we are said to be justified freely by grace, Rom. iii. 24; Titus iii. 7. The law, as it was a covenant of works, required exact and perfect obedience, in men's proper persons; this was legal justification. But in the new covenant, God is contented to accept this righteousness in the hand of a surety, and this is evangelical justification. This righteousness presents us in the sight of God as 'all fair,' Cant. iv. 7; as 'complete,' Col. ii. 10; as 'without spot or wrinkle,' Eph. v. 27; as 'without fault before the throne of God,' Rev. xiv. 5; as 'holy, and unblamable, and unreprouvable in his sight,' Col. i. 22. Oh, the happiness and blessedness, the safety and glory, of those precious souls, who, in the righteousness of Jesus Christ, stand perfectly righteous in the sight of God! But,

4. Fourthly, Know for your comfort, that this imputed righteousness of Christ *will answer to all the fears, doubts, and objections of your souls*. How shall I look up to God? The answer is, in the righteousness of Jesus Christ. How shall I have any communion with a holy God in this world? The answer is, in the righteousness of Christ. How shall I find acceptance with God? The answer is, in the righteousness of Christ. How shall I die? The answer is, in the righteousness of Christ. How shall I stand before the judgment-seat? The answer is, in the righteousness of Jesus Christ. Your sure and only way, under all temptations, fears, conflicts, doubts, and disputes, is, by faith, to remember Christ, and the sufferings of Christ, as your mediator and surety; and say, O Christ, thou art my sin, in being made sin for me, 2 Cor. v. 21; and thou art my curse, being made a curse for me, Gal. iii. 13; or rather, I am thy sin, and thou art my righteousness; I am thy curse, and thou art my blessing; I am thy death, and thou art my life; I am the wrath of God to thee, and thou art the love of God to me; I am thy hell, and thou art my heaven.

O sirs ! if you think of your sins, and of God's wrath ; if you think of your guiltiness, and of God's justice, your hearts will faint and fail, they will fear and tremble and sink into despair, if you do not think of Christ, if you do not stay and rest your souls upon the mediatory righteousness of Christ, the imputed righteousness of Christ. The imputed righteousness of Christ answers all cavils and objections, though there were millions of them, that can be made against the good estate of a believer. This is a precious truth, more worth than a world, that all our sins are pardoned, not only in a way of truth and mercy, but in a way of justice. Satan and our own consciences will object many things against our souls, if we plead only the mercy and the truth of God ; and will be ready to say, Oh, but where is then the justice of God ? can mercy pardon without the consent of his justice ? But now, whilst we rest upon the satisfaction of Christ, ' justice and mercy kiss each other,' Ps. lxxxv. 10 ; yea, justice saith, I am pleased. In a day of temptation, many things will be cast in our dish, about the multitude of our sins, and the greatness of our sins, and the grievousness of our sins, and about the circumstances and aggravations of our sins ; but that good word, ' Christ hath redeemed us from all iniquities,' he hath paid the full price that justice could exact or require ; and that good word, ' Mercy rejoiceth against judgment,' James ii. 13, may support, comfort, and bear us up under all. The infinite worth of Christ's obedience, did arise from the dignity of his person, who was God-man ; so that all the obedience of angels and men, if put together, could not amount to the excellency of Christ's satisfaction. The righteousness of Christ, is often called the righteousness of God, because it is a righteousness of God's providing, and a righteousness that God is fully satisfied with ; and therefore, no fears, no doubts, no cavils, no objections, no disputes, can stand before this blessed and glorious righteousness of Jesus Christ, that is imputed to us. But,

5. Fifthly, Know for your comfort, that the imputed righteousness of Christ is *the best title that you have to shew for* ' a kingdom that shakes not, for riches that corrupt not, for an inheritance that fadeth not away, and for an house not made with hands, but one eternal in the heavens,' Heb. xii. 28 ; 1 Pet. i. 3-5 ; 2 Cor. v. 1-4. It is the fairest certificate that you have to shew for all that happiness and blessedness that you look for in that other world. The righteousness of Christ is your life, your joy, your comfort, your crown, your confidence, your heaven, your all. Oh that you were still so wise as to keep a fixed eye and an awakened heart upon the mediatory righteousness of Christ ; for that is the righteousness by which you may safely and comfortably live, and by which you may happily and quietly die. It was a very sweet and golden confession, which Bernard made, when he thought himself to be at the point of death.¹ I confess, said he, I am not worthy, I have no merits of mine own to obtain heaven by, but my Lord had a double right thereunto ; an hereditary right as a Son, and a meritorious right as a sacrifice ; he was contented with the one right himself, the other right he hath given unto me ; by the virtue of which gift I do rightly lay claim unto it, and am not confounded. Ah, that believers would dwell much upon this, that they

have a righteousness in Christ, that is as full, perfect, and complete, as if they had fulfilled the law. 'Christ being the end of the law for righteousness to believers,' invests believers with a righteousness, every way as complete as the personal obedience of the law would have invested them withal, Rom. viii. 3, 4; yea, the righteousness that believers have by Christ is, in some respect, better than that they should have had by Adam: (1.) Because of the dignity of Christ's person, he being the Son of God, his righteousness is more glorious than Adam's was; his righteousness is called 'The righteousness of God;' and we are made the 'righteousness of God in him,' 2 Cor. v. 21. The first Adam was a mere man, the second Adam is God and man. (2.) Because the righteousness is perpetual. Adam was a mutable person, he lost his righteousness in one day, say some, and all that glory which his posterity should have possessed, had he stood fast in innocency; but the righteousness of Christ cannot be lost. His righteousness is like himself, from everlasting to everlasting. It is an everlasting righteousness, Dan. ix. 24. When once this white raiment is put upon a believer, it can never fall off, it can never be taken off. This splendid glorious righteousness of Jesus Christ's, is as really a believer's, as if he had wrought it himself, Rev. xix. 8. A believer is no loser, but a gainer, by Adam's fall. By the loss of Adam's righteousness is brought to light a more glorious and durable righteousness than ever Adam's was; and upon the account of an interest in this righteousness a believer may challenge all the glory of that upper world. But,

6. Sixthly, Know for your comfort, that this imputed righteousness of Christ *is the only true basis, bottom, and ground, for a believer to build his happiness upon, his joy and comfort upon, and the true peace and quiet of his conscience upon.* What though Satan, or thy own heart, or the world, condemns thee; yet in this thou mayest rejoice, that God justifies thee. You see what a bold challenge Paul makes, Rom. viii. 33, 'Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect? it is God that justifieth;' some read it question-wise, thus, 'Shall God that justifieth?' no such matter.¹ And if the judge acquit the prisoner at the bar, he cares not though the jailer or his fellow-prisoners condemn him; so here there are no accusers that a believer needs to fear, seeing that it is God himself, who is the supreme judge, that absolves him as just. God absolves, and therefore it is to no purpose for Satan to accuse us, Rev. xii. 10; nor for the law of Moses to accuse us, John v. 45; nor for our own consciences to accuse us, Rom. ii. 25; nor for the world to accuse us. God is the highest judge, and his tribunal-seat is the supreme judgment-seat; therefore from thence there is no appealing. As amongst men, persons accused or condemned, may appeal, till they come to the highest court; but if in the highest, they are absolved and discharged, then they are free, and safe and well: so the believer being absolved before God's tribunal-seat, there is no further accusations to be feared, all appeals from thence being void

¹ Rom. viii. 33. ἐγκαλέσει, signifies *in jus vocare*, or call unto the law. It is a law-custum to clear men by proclamation. If one hath been indicted at the Assizes, and no bill brought in against him, there is an 'Oh yes' made, if any have anything to say against the prisoner at the bar, let him come forth, since he stands upon his freedom. The application is easy.

and of no force. The consideration of which should arm us and comfort us and strengthen us against all terrors of conscience, guilt of sin, accusation of the law, and cruelty of Satan; inasmuch as these either dare not appear before God to accuse us or charge us; or if they do, it is but lost labour. Ambrose gives the sense thus, None can or dare retract the judgment of God; for he confidently provoketh all adversaries, if they dare come forth to accuse; not that there is no cause, but because God hath justified. 'It is God that justifieth,' therefore it is in vain to accuse them; and 'it is God that justifieth them:' if God doth it none can reverse it, for there are none that are equal with God. Let all the accusations, which shall come in against thee, from one hand or another, be true or false, they shall never hurt thee; for he from whom there is no appeal, hath fully acquitted thee, and therefore no accusation can endanger thy peace. Ah! what a strong cordial would this be to all the people of God, if they would but live in the power of this glorious truth, that it is 'God that justifies them,' and that there lies no accusations in the court of heaven against them! The great reason why many poor Christians are under so many dejections, despondencies, and perplexities, is because they drink no more of this water of life, 'It is God that justifieth.' Did Christians live more upon this breast, 'It is God that justifieth,' they would be no more like Pharaoh's lean kine, but would be fat and flourishing, Gen. xli. 1-3. Did they but draw more out of this well of salvation, 'It is God that justifieth,' how would their spirits revive, and a new life rise up in them, as did in the dead child, by the prophet Elisha's applying himself to it, 2 Kings iv. 34-37. The imputed righteousness of Christ is a real, sure, and solid foundation, upon which a believer may safely build his peace, joy, and everlasting rest; yea, it will help him to glory in tribulations, and to triumph over all adversities; Rom. v. 1-3; Isa. xlv. 24, 'Surely, shall one say, in the Lord I have righteousness and strength.' That which is the greatest terror in the world to unbelievers, is the strongest ground of comfort to believers; that is the justice and wrath of God against sin. Look how it was when the angel appeared at the resurrection of our Saviour Jesus Christ, 'The keepers were affrighted, and became as dead men;' but it was said to the women, 'Fear not ye, for ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, that was crucified,' Mat. xxviii. 4, 5: so it is much more in this case. When God's justice is powerfully manifested, the sinners of Sion and the world are afraid and terrified, Isa. xxxiii. 14. But yet, poor believers, seek for Christ who was crucified; ye need not fear anything; yea, you may be wonderfully cheered at this, and it is your greatest comfort that you have to deal with this just God, who hath already received satisfaction for your sins. It is observable that the saints triumph in the justice and judgments of God, that are most terrible to the enemies of God, in that which is the substance of the song of Moses and the Lamb, Rev. xv. 3-5: so in that, Luke xxi. 28, where the day of judgment is described, say some, and that in it, 'there shall be distress of nations, and men's hearts failing them for fear'—viz., of the justice and wrath of God. Why so? It is for 'looking after those things that are to come upon the earth; for the powers of the earth shall be shaken,' &c. 'But when these things

begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth near.' This day is the most dreadful day that ever was in the world to all the ungodly; but the just and faithful then shall be able to lift up their heads, to see all the world on a-light fire about them, and all the elements in terrible confusion. But how dare a poor creature lift up his head in such a case as this? 'They shall see the Son of man, coming in a cloud, with power and great glory.' Here is enough to comfort the poor members of Christ,—to see Christ, on whom they have believed, and who hath satisfied God's justice for them, and imputed his own righteousness to them: to see him set upon his judgment-seat, cannot but be matter of joy and rejoicing to them. Now they shall find the power of that word upon their souls: Isa. xl. 1, 'Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith the Lord; speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and say unto her that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned; for she hath received at the Lord's hand double for her sins;' *i.e.*, their conflict with the wrath of God is at an end, the punishment of their iniquity is accepted, they have received in their head and surety, Christ Jesus, double for their sins; *i.e.*, justice hath passed upon them, in their head, Christ Jesus; and they are sure that the judge of all the earth will do right, and will not punish their sins twice. The exactness of God's justice cannot do this: Job xxxiv. 10, 'Far be it from God that he should do wickedness, and from the Almighty that he should commit iniquity;' ver. 12, 'Yea, surely God will not do wickedly, neither will the Almighty pervert judgment.' It would be high injustice in a magistrate to punish the same offence twice; and it would be high blasphemy for any to assert that ever God should be guilty of such injustice. Whilst Christians set up a righteousness of their own, and build not upon the righteousness of Christ, how unsettled are they! Rom. x. 3; how miserably are they tossed up and down, sometimes fearing and sometimes hoping, sometimes supposing themselves in a good condition, and anon seeing themselves upon the very brink of hell! but now all is quiet and serene with that soul that builds upon the righteousness of Christ; for, he being 'justified by faith, hath peace with God,' Rom. v. 1. Observe that noble description of Christ in that Isa. xxxii. 2, 'And a man,' that is, the man Christ Jesus, 'shall be as a hiding-place from the wind, and a covert from the tempest, as rivers of water in a dry place, as the shadow of a great rock in a weary land.' When a man is clothed with the righteousness of Christ, who is God-man, it is neither wind nor tempest, it is neither drought nor weariness, that can disturb the peace of his soul; for Christ and his righteousness will be a hiding-place, a covert, and rivers of water, and the shadow of a great rock unto him; for, being at perfect peace with God, he may well say with the psalmist, 'I will lay me down in peace,' Ps. iv. 6-8. The peace and comfort of an awakened sinner can never stand firm and stable, but upon the basis of a positive righteousness. When a sensible sinner casts his eye upon his own righteousness, holiness, fastings, prayers, tears, humblings, meltings, he can find no place for the sole of his foot to rest firmly upon, by reason of the spots, and blots, and blemishes, that

cleaves both to his graces and duties. He knows that his prayers need pardon, and that his tears need washing in the blood of the Lamb, and that his very righteousness needs another's righteousness to secure him from condemnation. 'If thou, Lord, shouldst mark iniquity, O Lord, who shall stand?' Ps. cxxx. 3, and i. 5; that is, *rectus in curia*, 'stand,' that is, in judgment. Extremity of justice he deprecate; he would not be dealt with in rigour and rage. The best man's life is fuller of sins than the firmament is of stars, or the furnace of sparks; and therefore who can stand in judgment, and not fall under the weight of thy just wrath, which burneth as low as hell itself? *i.e.*, none can stand. Were the faults of the best man alive but written in his forehead, he was never able to stand in judgment. When a man comes to the law for justification, it convinceth him of sin; when he pleads his innocence, that he is not so great a sinner as others are, when he pleads his righteousness, his duties, his good meanings, and his good desires, the law tells him that they are all weighed in the balance of the sanctuary, and found too light, Dan. v. 27; the law tells him that the best of his duties will not save him, and that the least of his sins will damn him; the law tells him that his own righteousnesses are as filthy rags, do but defile him, and that his best services do but witness against him; the law looks for perfect and personal obedience, and because the sinner cannot come up to it, it pronounceth him accursed, Gal. iii. 10; and though the sinner sues hard for mercy, yet the law will shew him none, no, though he seeks it carefully with tears, Heb. xii. 17. But now, when the believing sinner casts his eye upon the righteousness of Christ, he sees that righteousness to be a perfect and exact righteousness, as perfect and exact as that of the law; yea, it is the very righteousness of the law, though not performed by him, yet by his surety, 'The Lord his righteousness;' and upon this foundation he stands firm, and 'rejoices with joy unspeakable, and full of glory.' The saints of old have always placed their happiness, peace, and comfort, in their perfect and complete justification, rather than in their imperfect and incomplete sanctification, as you may see by the scriptures in the margin, with many others that are scattered up and down in the blessed book of God.¹ That text is worthy to be written in letters of gold: Isa. lxi. 10, 'I will greatly rejoice in the Lord,' saith the sound believer, 'my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation.' He hath imputed and given unto me the perfect holiness and obedience of my blessed Saviour, and made it mine. 'He hath covered me (all over, from top to toe) with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.' Though a Christian's inherent righteousness be weak and imperfect, maimed and stained, blotted and blurred, as it is, yet it affords much comfort, peace, joy, and rejoicing, as you may see by comparing the scriptures in the margin together.² Job was much taken with his inherent righteousness:

¹ Jer. xxiii. 6; 1 Peter i. 8; Luke vii. 48, 50; Rom. iv. 6, 8, and v. 1, 3; Isa. xxxviii. 16, 17, and xlv. 24, 25; Phil. iv. 7.

² 1 Chron. xxix. 9; Job xxvii. 4-6; Neh. xiii. 14, 22, 3; Isa. xxxviii. 31; Prov. xxi. 14; 2 Cor. i. 12; 1 Pet. iii. 3, 4, and v. 4.

Job xxix. 14, 'I put on righteousness, and it clothed me; my judgment was as a robe and a diadem unto me.' Look, as sober, modest, comely apparel doth much set forth and adorn the body in the eyes of men, so doth inherent grace, inherent holiness, inherent righteousness, when it sparkles in the faces, lips, lives, and good works of the saints, much more beautify and adorn them in the eyes both of God and man. Now if this garment of inherent righteousness, that hath so many spots and rents in it, will adorn us, and joy us so much, what a beauty and glory is that which the Lord our God hath put upon us, in clothing us with the robe of his Son's righteousness; for by this means we shall recover more by Christ than we lost by Adam. The robe of righteousness which we have gotten by Christ, the second Adam, is far more glorious than that which we were deprived of by the first Adam. But,

7. Seventhly, Then know for your comfort, that you have *the highest reason in the world to rejoice and triumph in Christ Jesus*, Gal. vi. 14: Phil. iii. 3, 'For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus.' We rejoice in the person of Christ, and we rejoice in the righteousness of Christ: 2 Cor. ii. 14, 'Now thanks be to God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ.' *Deo gratias* was ever in Paul's mouth, and ever in Austin's mouth, and should be ever in a Christian's mouth, when his eye is fixed upon the righteousness of Christ. Every believer is in a more blessed and happy estate, by means of the righteousness of Christ, than Adam was in innocency. And that upon a threefold account; all which are just and noble grounds for every Christian to rejoice and triumph in Christ Jesus.

(1.) That righteousness which Adam had was *uncertain, and such as it was possible for him to lose*, Gen. iii.; yea, he did lose it, and that in a very short time, Ps. viii. 5. God gave him power and freedom of will either to hold it or lose it; and we know soon after, upon choice, he proved a bankrupt; but the righteousness that we have by Jesus Christ is made more firm and sure to us. It is that good part, that noble portion, that shall never be taken from us, as Christ said to Mary, Luke x. 42. Adam sinned away his righteousness, but a believer cannot sin away the righteousness of Jesus Christ. It is not possible for the elect of God so to sin as to lose Christ, or to strip themselves of that robe of righteousness which Christ hath put upon them, 1 John iii. 9; Rom. viii. 35, 39. The gates of hell shall never be able to prevail against that soul that is interested in Christ, that is clothed with the righteousness of Christ, Mat. xvi. 18. Now what higher ground of joy and triumph in Christ Jesus can there be than this? But,

(2.) The righteousness that Adam had was *in his own keeping*; the spring and root of it was founded in himself, and that was the cause why he lost it so soon. Adam, like the prodigal son, Luke xv. 12, 13, had all his portion, his happiness, his holiness, his blessedness, his righteousness, in his own hands, in his own keeping; and so quickly lost stock and block, as some speak. Oh but now, that blessed righteousness that we have by Jesus Christ, is not in our own keeping, but in our Father's keeping. Look, as our persons, graces, and inherent

righteousness are kept, as in a garrison,¹ by the power of God unto salvation, 1 Pet. i. 5; so that righteousness that we have by Jesus Christ is kept for us by the mighty power of God unto salvation. God the Father is the Lord Keeper, not only of our inherent righteousness, but also of the imputed righteousness of Jesus Christ unto us. 'My sheep shall never perish,' saith our Saviour, John x. 28, 29, 'neither shall any pluck them out of my hand; my Father that gave them me is greater than all, and none is able to pluck them out of my Father's hands.' Though the saints may meet with many shakings and tossings in their various conditions in this world, yet their final perseverance, till they come to full possession of eternal life, is certain. God is so unchangeable in his purposes of love, and so invincible in his power, that neither Satan, nor the world, nor their own flesh, shall ever be able to separate them from 'a crown of righteousness,' 2 Tim. iv. 7, 8; 'a crown of life,' Rev. ii. 10; 'a crown of glory,' 1 Pet. v. 4. The power of God is so far above all created opposition, that it will certainly maintain the saints in a state of grace. Now what a bottom and ground for rejoicing and triumphing in Christ Jesus is here! But,

(3.) Admit, that the righteousness that Adam had in his creation had been unchangeable, and that he could never have lost it; yet, it had been but *the righteousness of a man, of a mere creature*; and what a poor, low righteousness would that have been, to that high and glorious righteousness that we have by Jesus Christ, which is the righteousness of such a person as was God as well as man; yea, that righteousness that we have by Jesus Christ is a higher righteousness, and a more excellent, transcendent righteousness than that of the angels. Though the righteousness of the angels be perfect and complete in its kind, yet it is but the righteousness of mere creatures; but the righteousness of the saints, in which they stand clothed before the throne of God, is the righteousness of that person which is both God and man. Look, as the second Adam was a far more excellent person than the first Adam was: 'The first man was of the earth, earthy,' as the apostle speaks; 'the second was the Lord from heaven,' 1 Cor. xv. 47; not for the matter of his body, for he was made of a woman, but for the original and dignity of his person: whereof you may see a lively and lofty description in Heb. i. 2, 3;² so his righteousness also must needs be far more excellent, absolute, glorious, and every way all-sufficient to satisfy the infinite justice of God, and the exact perfection of his holy law, than ever Adam's righteousness could possibly have done. Remember, sirs, that that righteousness that we have by Jesus Christ is called the righteousness of God: 'He made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him,' saith the apostle in 2 Cor. v. 21. Now that righteousness that we have by Jesus Christ, is called the righteousness of God: (1.) Because it is such a righteousness as God requires; (2.) As he approves of and accepts; (3.) As he takes infinite pleasure and delight and

¹ *φρουρουμένους*. The original is a military word, and signifies safe keeping; kept as with a guard, or in a garrison, that is, well fenced with walls and works, and so is made impregnable.

² Look, as Adam conveys his guilt to all his children, so Christ conveys his righteousness to all his: he was *caput cum fœdere*, as well as the first Adam.

satisfaction in. The righteousness the apostle speaks of in that scripture last mentioned, is not to be understood of the essential righteousness of Christ, which is infinite, and no ways communicable to the creature, unless we will make a creature a god; but we are to understand it, of that righteousness of Christ that is imputed to believers, as their sin is imputed to him. Now what a well of salvation is here! What three noble grounds and what matchless bottoms are here for a Christian's joy and triumph in Christ Jesus, who hath put so glorious a robe as his own righteousness upon them! Ah, Christians, let not the consolations of God be small in your eyes, Job xv. 11; why take you no more comfort and delight in Christ Jesus? why rejoice you no more in him? Not to rejoice in Christ Jesus is a plain breach of that gospel command, 'Rejoice in the Lord always,' that is, rejoice in Christ, 'and again I say, rejoice,' saith the apostle, Phil. iv. 4. He doubleth the mandate, to shew the necessity and excellency of the duty: so Phil. iii. 1, 'Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord.' Now, in some respects, the breach of the commands of the gospel are greater than the breach of the commands of the moral law; for the breach of the commands of the gospel carrieth in it a contempt and light esteem of Jesus Christ, see Heb. ii. 2, 3, viii. 6, and x. 28, 29. Men's not rejoicing in Christ Jesus must flow from some dangerous humour, and base corruption or other, that highly distempers their precious souls. If all created excellencies, if all the privileges of God's people, if all the kingdoms of the earth, and the glory of them, were to be presented at one view, they would all appear as nothing and emptiness, in comparison of the excellency and fulness that is to be found in Christ Jesus: and therefore the greater is their sin, who rejoice not in Christ Jesus. Do you ask me where be my jewels? my jewels are my husband and his triumphs, said Phocion's wife.¹ Do you ask me where be my ornaments? my ornaments are my two sons brought up in virtue and learning, said the mother of the Gracchi. Do you ask me where be my treasures? my treasures are my friends, said Constantius, the father of Constantine. But now, if you ask a child of God, when he is not clouded, tempted, deserted, dejected, where be his jewels, his treasures, his ornaments, his comfort, his joy, his delight; he will answer with that martyr, none but Christ, none but Christ. Oh! none to Christ, none to Christ! 'Christ is all in all unto me,' Col. iii. 11. *Æterna erit exultatio, quæ bono lætatur æterno*: That joy lasts for ever, whose object remains for ever. Such an object is our Lord Jesus Christ, and therefore the joy of the saints should still be exercised upon our Lord Jesus Christ. Shall the worldling rejoice in his barns, the rich man in his bags, the ambitious man in his honours, the voluptuous man in his pleasures, and the wanton in his Delilahs; and shall not a Christian rejoice in Christ Jesus, and in that robe of righteousness, and in those garments of salvation, with which Christ hath covered him? Isa. lxi. 10. The joy of that Christian that keeps a fixed eye upon Christ and his righteousness cannot be expressed, it cannot be painted. No man can paint the sweetness of the honeycomb, nor the sweetness of a cluster of Canaan, nor the fragraney of the rose of Sharon. As the being of

¹ Plutarch in Phocione.

things cannot be painted, so the sweetness of things cannot be painted. The joy of the Holy Ghost cannot be painted, nor that joy that arises in a Christian's heart, who keeps up a daily converse with Christ and his righteousness, cannot be painted, it cannot be expressed. Who can look upon the glorious body of our Lord Jesus Christ, and seriously consider, that even every vein of that blessed body did bleed to bring him to heaven, and not rejoice in Christ Jesus? who can look upon the glorious righteousness of Christ, imputed to him, and not be filled with an exuberancy of spiritual joy in God his Saviour? There is not the pardon of the least sin, nor the least degree of grace, nor the least drop of mercy, but cost Christ dear, for he must die, and he must be made a sacrifice, and he must be accursed, that pardon may be thine, and grace thine, and mercy thine : and oh, how should this draw out thy heart to rejoice and triumph in Christ Jesus ! The work of redemption sets both angels and saints a-rejoicing and triumphing in Christ Jesus, Rev. v. 11-14 ; and why not we, why not we also, who have received infinite more benefit by the work of redemption, than ever the angels have ? Rev. i. 5, 6, and v. 8-10. A beautiful face is at all times pleasing to the eye ; but then especially, when there is joy manifested in the countenance. Joy in the face puts a new beauty upon a person, and makes that which before was beautiful, to be exceeding beautiful, it puts a lustre upon beauty ; so does holy joy and rejoicing in Christ Jesus, put, as it were, a new beauty and lustre upon Christ. Though the Romans punished one that feasted, and looked out at a window with a garland on his head, in the second Punic war ;¹ yet, you may be sure, that God will never punish you for rejoicing and triumphing in Christ Jesus, let the times be never so sad or bad, in respect of war, blood, or misery. But,

8. Eighthly, The imputed righteousness of Christ may serve to *comfort, support, and bear up the hearts of the people of God, from fainting and sinking under the sense of the weakness and imperfection of their inherent righteousness.* The church of old have lamentingly said, ' We are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousness is as filthy rags,' Isa. lxiv. 6. When a Christian keeps a serious eye upon the spots, blots, blemishes, infirmities, and follies, that cleaves to his inherent righteousness, fears and tremblings arise, to the saddening and sinking of his soul ; but when he casts a fixed eye upon the righteousness of Christ imputed to him, then his comforts revive, and his heart bears up ; for, though he hath no righteousness of his own, by which his soul may stand accepted before God, yet he hath God's righteousness, which infinitely transcends his own, and such as, in God's account, goes for his, as if he had exactly fulfilled the righteousness which the law requires ; according to that of the apostle, Rom. ix. 30, ' What shall we say then ? the Gentiles which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith.' Faith wraps itself in the righteousness of Christ, and so justifieth us. The Gentiles sought righteousness, not in themselves but in Christ, which they apprehending by faith, were by it justified in the sight of God ; and the Jews, seeking it in themselves, and thinking, by the goodness of their own works, to attain to the righteousness

¹ Pliny, i. c. 7.

of the law, missed of it; it being in no man's power perfectly to fulfil the same, only Christ hath exactly fulfilled it for all that by faith close savingly with him. O sirs! none can be justified in the sight of God, by a righteousness of their own making: but whosoever will be justified, must be justified by the righteousness of Christ through faith, Rom. iii. 20, 28, and x. 3; Gal. ii. 16; Tit. iii. 5. The Gentiles by faith attain the righteousness of the law, therefore the righteousness of the law and of faith are all one; viz., in respect of matter and form; the difference is only in the worker. The law requires it to be done by ourselves; the gospel mitigates the rigour of the law, and offers the righteousness of Christ, who performed the law, even to a hair's-breadth. The right way to righteousness for justification is by Christ, who is the way, the door, the truth, and the life. Because we want a righteousness of our own, God hath assigned us the righteousness of Christ, which is infinitely better than our own, yea, better than our very lives—may I not say, yea, better than our very souls? 'The branch,' Christ Jesus is called, 'Jehovah Tsidkenu, the Lord our righteousness;' Jer. xxiii. 6, 'And this is his name whereby he shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.' Where note, *first*, to be called by this name is to be so really, for Christ is never called what he is not; and so he is to the same purpose elsewhere called 'Immanuel, God with us,' Mat. i. 23; that is, he shall be so indeed, 'God with us,' so here he shall be called, 'the Lord our righteousness;' that is, he shall be so indeed. *Secondly*, observe this is one of his glorious names; that is, one of his attributes, which he accounts his excellency and his glory. Now all the attributes of Christ are unchangeable, so that he can as easily change his nature as his name. Now remember that this imputed righteousness of Christ procures acceptance for our inherent righteousness. When a sincere Christian casts his eye upon the weaknesses, infirmities, and imperfections that daily attend his best services, he sighs and mourns; but if he looks upward to the imputed righteousness of Jesus Christ, that shall bring forth his infirm, weak, and sinful performances perfect, spotless, and sinless, and approved according to the tenor of the gospel, so that they become spiritual sacrifices, he cannot but rejoice, 1 Pet. ii. 5. For as there is an imputation of righteousness to the persons of believers, so there is also an imputation to their services and actions. As the fact of Phinehas was imputed to him for righteousness, Ps. cvi. 31, so the imperfect good works that are done by believers are accounted righteousness, or, as Calvin speaks, 'are accounted for righteousness, they being dipped in the blood of Christ,' *tincta sanguine Christi*, i.e., they are accounted righteous actions; and so sincere Christians shall be judged according to their good works, though not saved for them, Rev. xi. 18, and xx. 12; Mat. xxv. 34-37. And it is observable, in that famous process of the last judgment, that the supreme judge makes mention of the bounty and liberality of the saints, and so bestows the crown of life and the eternal inheritance upon them; so that, though the Lord's faithful ones have eminent cause to be humbled and afflicted for the many weaknesses that cleaves to their best duties, yet, on the other hand, they have wonderful cause to rejoice and triumph that they are made perfect through Jesus Christ,

and that the Lord looks at them, through the righteousness of Christ, as fruits of his own Spirit, Heb. xiii. 20, 21; 1 Cor. vi. 11. The Sun of Righteousness hath healing enough in his wings for all our spiritual maladies, Mal. iv. 2. The saints' prayers, being perfumed with Christ's odours, are highly accepted in heaven, Rev. viii. 3, 4. Upon this bottom of imputed righteousness believers may have exceeding strong consolation, and good hope through grace, that both their persons and services do find singular acceptation with God, as having no spot or blemish at all in them. Surely righteousness imputed must be the top of our happiness and blessedness, Rom. iv. 5, 6. But,

9. Ninthly and lastly, Know for your comfort, that imputed righteousness will give you *the greatest boldness before God's judgment-seat*. There is an absolute and indispensable necessity of a perfect righteousness wherewith to appear before God. The holiness of God's nature, the righteousness of his government, the severity of his law, and the terror of wrath, calls aloud upon the sinner for a complete righteousness, without which there is no standing in judgment, Ps. i. 5. That righteousness only is able to justify us before God which is perfect, and that hath no defect nor blemish in it, such as may abide the trial before his judgment-seat, such as may fitly satisfy his justice, and make our peace with him; and consequently, such as whereby the law of God is fulfilled. Therefore it is called the righteousness of God; such a righteousness as he requires, as will stand before him, and satisfy his justice, Rom. x. 3. So the apostle saith, 'The righteousness of the law must be fulfilled in us,' Rom. viii. 4. Now there is no other righteousness under heaven whereby the law of God was ever perfectly fulfilled, but by the righteousness of Christ alone. No righteousness below the righteousness of Christ was ever able to abide the trial at God's judgment-seat, and fully to satisfy his justice, and pacify his wrath. A gracious soul triumphs more in the righteousness of Christ imputed, than he would have done if he could have stood in the righteousness in which he was created. This is the crowning comfort to a sensible and understanding soul, that he stands righteous before a judgment-seat, in that full, exact, perfect, complete, matchless, spotless, peerless, and most acceptable righteousness of Christ imputed to him. The righteousness of Christ is therefore called the righteousness of God, because it is it which God hath assigned, and which God doth accept for us in our justification, and for and in which he doth acquit and pronounce us righteous before his seat of justice, Rom. iii. 21, 22, and x. 3; Phil. iii. 9. There is an indispensable necessity that lies upon the sinner to have such a righteousness to his justification as may render his appearance safe and comfortable in the day of judgment. Now there is no righteousness that can abide that day of fiery trial, but the righteousness of Christ imputed to us. Paul, that great apostle, had as fair and as full a certificate to shew for a legal justification as any person under heaven had, Phil. iii. 4-6; Acts xxiii. 6; 2 Cor. xi. 22; but yet he durst not stand by that righteousness, he durst not plead that righteousness, he durst not appear in that righteousness before the dreadful judgment-seat. But oh, how earnest, how importunate is he, that he may be found, in that great day of the Lord, in the mediatory righteousness of Christ, and not in his own personal righteous-

ness, which he looked upon as filthy rags, as dross, dung, dogs' meat, Phil. iii. 9, 10. The great thing that he most strongly insists upon is, that he might be clothed with the robe of Christ's righteousness; for then he knew that the law could not say black was his eye, and that the judge upon the bench would pronounce him righteous, and bid him enter into the joy of his Lord, Mat. xxv. 21, 23, 24; a joy too great to enter into him, and therefore he must enter into that. When the match is made up between Christ and the soul, that soul bears her sovereign's name. The spouse of the first Adam and her husband had both one name, 'God called their name Adam, in the day that he made them,' Gen. v. 2; so the spouse of the second Adam, in the change of her condition, from a single to a married estate with Christ the Lamb, had a change of her name. The head is called, 'the Lord our righteousness,' Jer. xxiii. 6; and so is the church: Jer. xxxiii. 16, 'In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, the Lord our righteousness.' Here is a sameness of name.¹ As Christ is called, 'the Lord our righteousness,' so his spouse is called, 'the Lord our righteousness.' Oh, happy transnomination! Christ's bride being one with himself, and having his righteousness imputed to her, is called, 'the Lord our righteousness;' and therefore they may, with the greatest cheerfulness and boldness, bear up, in the great day of account, who have the perfect righteousness of Christ imputed to them, especially if you consider, (1.) That this righteousness is of infinite value and worth; (2.) That it is an everlasting righteousness, a righteousness that can never be lost, Dan. ix. 24; (3.) That it is an unchangeable righteousness. Though times change, and men change, and friends change, and providences change, and the moon change, yet the Sun of Righteousness never changes, 'in him is no variableness, neither shadow of turning,' Mal. iv. 2; James i. 17; (4.) That it is a complete and unspotted righteousness, an unblamable righteousness, and unblemished righteousness; and therefore God can neither in justice except or object against it. In this righteousness the believer lives, in this righteousness the believer dies, and in this righteousness believers shall arise, and appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, to the deep admiration of all the elect angels, and to the transcendent terror and horror of all reprobates, and to the matchless joy and triumph of all on Christ's right hand, who shall then shout and sing, Isa. lxi. 10, 'I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with jewels.' Oh, how will Christ, in this great day, be admired and glorified in all his saints, 2 Thes. i. 10, when every saint, wrapped up in this fine linen, in this white robe of Christ's righteousness, shall shine more gloriously than ten thousand suns! In the great day of the Lord, when the saints shall stand before the

¹ Christ and Christians are namesakes. *Caput et corpus, unus est Christus.*—Aug. The head is called Christ, and the members are called Christ, 1 Cor. xii. 12. Christ is called Solomon, Cant. i. 1, and iii. 11, in Hebrew, *Shelomah* of peace, and the church is called Shulamite, by her bridegroom's name, Cant. vi. 13.

tribunal of God, clothed in the perfect righteousness of Jesus Christ, they shall then stand, *rectus in curiâ*; they shall then be pronounced righteous, even in the court of divine justice, which sentence will fill their souls with comfort, and the souls of sinners with astonishment, Rev. xx. 12, and xii. 10. Suppose we saw the believing sinner, holding up his hand at God's bar; the books opened, the accuser of the brethren present, the witnesses ready, and the judge on the bench thus bespeaking the sinner at the bar, Rom. vii. 12, 14, 16, and Gal. iii. 10. O sinner, sinner, thou standest here indicted before me, for many millions of sins of commission, and for many millions of sins of omission; thou hast broken my holy, just, and righteous laws beyond all human conception or expression, and hereof thou art proved guilty; what hast thou now to say for thyself why thou shouldst not be eternally cast? Upon this, the sinner pleads guilty; but withal he earnestly desires that he may have time and liberty to plead for himself, and to offer his reasons why that dreadful sentence, Go, you cursed, &c., Mat. xxv. 41, should not be passed upon him. The liberty desired being granted by the judge, the sinner pleads that his surety, Jesus Christ, hath, by his blood and sufferings, given full and complete satisfaction to divine justice, and that he hath paid down upon the nail the whole debt at once, and that it can never stand with the holiness and unspotted justice of God to demand satisfaction twice, Heb. x. 10, 14. If the judge shall further object, Ay, but sinner, sinner, the law requireth an exact and perfect righteousness in the personal fulfilling of it; now, sinner, where is thy exact and perfect righteousness? Gal. iii. 10; Isa. xlv. 24. Upon which the believing sinner very readily, cheerfully, humbly, and boldly replies, My righteousness is upon the bench, 'in the Lord have I righteousness.' Christ, my surety, hath fulfilled the law on my behalf. The law's righteousness consists in two things, (1.) In its requiring perfect conformity to its commands; (2.) In its demanding satisfaction, or the undergoing of its penalty, upon the violation of it. Now Christ, by his active and passive obedience, hath fulfilled the law for righteousness, and this active and passive obedience of Jesus Christ is imputed to me. His obeying the law to the full, his perfect conforming to its commands, his doing, as well as his dying obedience, is by grace made over and reckoned to me, in order to my justification and salvation; and this is my plea, by which I will stand before the judge of all the world. Upon this the sinner's plea is accepted as good in law, and accordingly he is pronounced righteous; and goes away, glorying and rejoicing, triumphing and shouting it out, Righteous, righteous, righteous, righteous; 'In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory,' Isa. xlv. 25. And thus you see that there are nine springs of strong consolation that flow into your souls, through the imputation of Christ's righteousness unto you. But,

VI. The sixth plea that a believer may form up as to the ten scriptures in the margin¹ that refer to the great day of account, or to a man's particular account, may be drawn from the consideration

¹ Eccles. xi. 9, and xii. 14; Mat. xii. 14. and xviii. 23; Luke xvi. 3; Rom. xiv. 10; 2 Cor. v. 10; Heb. ix. 27, and xii. 17; 1 Pet. iv. 5.

of Christ as a common person, a representative head, one that represents another man's person, and acts the part of another, according to the appointment of the law, the acceptance of the judge; so that what is done by him, the person is said to do whose person he doth represent. And so was Adam a common person, and that by an act of God's sovereignty appointing him, in making a covenant with him so to be, and he did represent all mankind, Rom. v. 15-19. And hence it comes to pass that his sin is imputed unto us, and made ours;¹ so in our law an attorney appears in the behalf of his client, and so Christ is said to be gone to heaven as our attorney, to appear in the presence of God for us, Heb. ix. 24. *ἐμφανισθῆναι*, To appear as a lawyer appears for his client, opens the cause, pleads the cause, and carries it. The word *appear* is *verbum forense*, an expression borrowed from the custom of human courts; for in them, when the plaintiff or defendant is called, their attorney appeareth in their behalf; so 1 John ii. 1. You know that the Levitical priest was wont to appear before God in the people's name. Now he was but a figure; in Christ is the solid truth, and full effect of the figure. Or as taking possession, livery, and seizing² by an attorney is all one as if done by the person himself who is represented, and is valid; so the Lord Jesus, he is a common person by an act of God's sovereignty, representing the persons of all the elect of God, being designed and appointed by God to be a second Adam. And as the first Adam did represent all in him, so the second Adam does represent all in him also; and therefore as judgment came upon all in the first Adam, so righteousness comes upon all in the second Adam. We all transgressed the royal law in Adam, we were all in Adam's loins; what he was, we were; what he did, we did. Although we did not in our own persons either talk with the serpent, or put forth our hands to take the fruit, yet we did eat the forbidden fruit as well as he, and so broke the holy law, and turned aside in him; for he was not a single person, standing for himself alone, but a public person, standing in the room of all mankind; therefore his sin, being not merely the sin of his person, but of the whole nature of man, is justly imputed to us all. If Adam had stood fast in his uprightness, in his primitive purity, glory and excellency, we should all have shared in his happiness and blessedness, Eccles. vii. 29; but he falling and forfeiting all, we must all share with him in his loss and misery. Ponder upon Rom. v. 12, 'In whom all have sinned.' As the murrain infects the whole flock, so sin and the curse seizeth upon all the whole world, as well as upon Adam and Eve. And ver. 19, 'By one man's disobedience many are made sinners.' 'Many' is here put for 'all,' as 'all' elsewhere is put for 'many,' 1 Tim. ii. 3. All sinners are tainted with Adam's guilt and filth. Adam was the head, all his posterity the members. If the head plot and practise treason against the state, is not this judged the act of the whole body? He was the tree, we the branches; when the tree falls, all the branches fall with it. When Christ died on the cross, he did stand in our room, and

¹ We were all in Adam, as the whole country [county] is in a parliament-man; and although we chose not, yet God chose for us.

² 'Livery' = delivery; 'seizing' = taking possession. Law terms in use still.—G.

place, and stead; for he did lay down his life for us as a ransom. Now when one dies for another in way of ransom, he does not only die for the benefit and profit of the ransomed, but in the place, and room, and stead of the ransomed; and thus Christ died for us, as himself testifies: 'The son of man came to give himself a ransom for many,' Mark x. 45. *λύτρον ἀντι πολλῶν*. Christ rose as a common person, representing all his elect; and Christ was sanctified as a common person, representing all his elect; and Christ was justified as a common person, representing all his elect. Look, as we were condemned in Adam, as he was a common person, so we are justified by Christ, as in a common person also; so that every believer may well look upon himself as acquitted, in his justification, from the guilt of his sins, they being laid upon the head of his surety, Heb. ix. 28. It is a very great part of a Christian's wisdom to be often looking upon Christ as a representative-head, as one in whom he died, in whom he rose, in whom he is sanctified, and in whom he is justified, Eph. ii. 6. How would such a daily eyeing of Christ scatter a Christian's fears, arm him against temptations, support him under afflictions, weaken his sins, strengthen his graces, cheer his soul, and mend his life!

It is very observable, that in the Levitical expiatory sacrifices there was the substitution of them in the place and stead of the offenders themselves. The people's sin, and the punishment due to them thereupon, was laid upon the poor beasts that died for them. I might multiply scriptures to evidence this, but I shall only hint at one or two plain, pregnant texts to clear it. Take that, Lev. xvii. 11, 'For the life of the flesh is in the blood; and I have given it to you upon the altar, to make an atonement for your souls: for it is the blood that maketh atonement for the soul.'¹ Mark here, the blood is to make atonement for the souls of the people of Israel—that is, in the room and stead of their souls, and accordingly it did make atonement for their souls; so that in the blood sacrificed, which was a type of the blood of Christ, there was soul for soul, life for life; the soul and life of the sacrifice for the precious soul and life of the sinner. Now here you see substitution of the one in the room of the other. The transferring of the guilt and punishment of the people's sins over to their sacrifices in those days, was the reason why the sacrifices were said to bear the iniquities of the people, Lev. xvi. 22, and x. 17, &c. And it is observable that at the great expiation Aaron was to lay both his hands upon the head of the live goat, and to confess over him all the sins of the children of Israel, &c., Lev. xvi. 21. By this ceremony of imposition of hands, is signified the transferring of their sins upon the goat, herein to type out Christ, upon whom God 'did lay the iniquity of us all,' Isa. liii. 6. Certainly the main thing that is held forth by this rite,—viz., Aaron's laying both his hands upon the head of the live goat, is the translation of the sinner's guilt to the sacrifice, and the substitution of it in his stead. Typically, the very sins of the people were imposed upon the goat, who herein was a type of Christ which did himself bear our sins. Yea, the Hebrews [Maimonides]

¹ Justin Martyr observes the great mercy of God to mankind in that, *loco hominis*, instead of man, he caused beasts to be sacrificed.

themselves hold that the scapegoat made atonement for all their sins, lighter and greater, presumptuously and ignorantly committed. Certainly the scapegoat was a most lively type of our blessed Saviour—(1.) In that ‘the Lord laid upon him the iniquity of us all,’ as the sins of Israel were laid upon the head of the goat. (2.) As the goat was carried away, so Christ was ‘cut off from the land of the living, his life was taken from off the earth,’ Isa. iv. 3, and liii. 8. (3.) As this goat was not killed, so ‘Christ through the eternal Spirit offered up himself,’ whereby he was made alive after death, Acts ix. 33; Heb. ix. 14; 1 Pet. iii. 18. Though Christ Jesus died for our sins according to his humanity, yet death could not detain him nor overcome him, nor keep him prisoner, Hosea xiii. 14, but, by virtue of his impassible deity, he rises again and triumphs over death and the grave, and over principalities and powers, Col. ii. 15. (4.) As this goat went into an inhabitable place,¹ so Christ went into heaven—‘whither I go ye cannot come,’ John xiii. 33. Christ speaks this not to exclude his disciples out of heaven, but only to shew that their entrance was put off for a time, ver. 36. Saints must not expect to go to heaven and rest with Christ till they have ‘fought the good fight of faith, finished their course, run their race,’ and ‘served their generation.’² Christ’s own children, by all their studies, prayers, tears, and endeavours, cannot get to heaven unless Christ come and fetches them thither. Christ’s own servants cannot get to heaven presently nor of themselves, no more than the Jews could do. Now if you please to cast your eye upon the Lord Jesus, you will find an exact correspondency between the type and the antitype, the one fully answering to the other. Did they carry substitution in them? that eminently was in Christ. He indeed substituted himself in the sinner’s room; he took our guilt upon him, and put himself in our place, and died in our stead; he died that we might not die. Whatever we should have undergone, that he underwent in his body and soul; he did bear as our ἀντίψυχος all the punishments and torments that were due to us. Christ’s suffering, dying, satisfying in our stead, is the great article of a Christian’s faith, and the main prop and foundation of the believer’s hope. It is bottomed, as an eternal and unmovable truth, upon the sure basis of the blessed word. Substitution, in the case of the old sacrifices, is not so evidently held forth in the law, but substitution with respect to Christ and his sacrifice is more evidently set forth in the gospel. Ponder seriously upon these texts: Rom. v. 6, ‘For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly;’ ver. 8, ‘For God commendeth his love towards us, in that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us.’ Herein God lays naked to us the tenderest bowels of his Fatherly compassions, as in an anatomy.³ There was an absolute necessity of Christ’s dying for sinners, for, (1.) God’s justice had decreed it; (2.) His word had foretold it;

¹ The Elizabethan writers used *inhabitable* as the opposite of *habitable*.—G.

² 2 Tim. iv. 7, 8; Heb. xii. 1; 1 Cor. ix. 24; Acts xiii. 36; John xiv. 1–3.

³ This shews us the greatness of man’s sin and of Christ’s love, of Satan’s malice and of God’s justice; and it shews us the madness and blindness of the popish religion, which tells us that some sins are so light and venial as that the sprinkling of holy water and ashes will purge them away.

(3.) The sacrifices in the law had prefigured it; (4.) The foulness of man's sin had deserved it; (5.) The redemption of man called for it; (6.) The glory of God was greatly exalted by it. So 1 Pet. iii. 18, 'For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust.' To see Christ the just suffer in the stead of the unjust, is the wonderment of angels and the torment of devils: 1 Pet. iv. 1, 'Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh,' &c., that is, in the human nature, for the expiation and taking away of our sins; 1 Pet. ii. 21, 'Because Christ also suffered for us;' John x. 11, 'I lay down my life for the sheep.' This good shepherd lays down life for life, his own dear life for the life of his sheep: John xi. 50, 'Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not,' that is, rather than the whole nation should perish. Caiaphas took it for granted, that either Christ or their nation must perish, and, as he foolishly thought, that of two evils he designed the least to be chosen, that is, that Christ should rather perish than their nation; but God so guided his tongue that he unwittingly, by the powerful instinct of the Spirit, prophesied of the fruit of Christ's death for the reconciliation and salvation of the elect of God. Heb. ii. 9, 'That he by the grace of God should taste death for every man,' *ὑπὲρ παντός*, or for every creature. Who all these be, the context sheweth—(1.) Sons that must be led unto glory, ver. 10; (2.) Christ's brethren, ver. 11; (3.) Such children as are given by God unto Christ, ver. 13. In all which scriptures the preposition *ὑπὲρ* is used, which most commonly notes substitution, the doing or suffering of something by one in the stead and place of others, and so it is all along here to be taken. But there is another preposition, *ἀντὶ*, that proves the thing I am upon undeniably: Mat. xx. 28, 'Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many,' *λύτρον ἀντὶ πολλῶν*. *Λύτρον* signifies a redemptory price, a valuable rate; for it was the blood of God wherewith the church was purchased, Acts xx. 28: 1 Tim. ii. 6, 'Who gave himself a ransom,' *ἀντίλυτρον*, 'for all.' The Greek word signifies a counterprice, such as we could never have paid, but must have remained everlasting prisoners to the wrath and justice of God. O sirs! Christ did not barely deliver poor captive souls, but he delivered them in the way of a ransom, which ransom he paid down upon the nail. When their ransom was ten thousand talents, and they had not one farthing to lay down, Christ stands up in their room and pays the whole ransom, Mat. xviii. 24. Every one knows that *ἀντὶ*, in composition, signifies but two things, either opposition and contrariety, or substitution and commutation, Mat. v. 38; so that the matter will thus issue, that either we must carry it thus, that Christ 'gave himself a ransom against sinners,' than which nothing can be more absurd and false, or else thus, that he 'gave himself a ransom in the room and stead of sinners,' which is as true as truth itself, John ii. 28, 29. Certainly no head can invent, no heart can conceive, nor no tongue can express more clear, plain, pregnant, and apposite words and phrases for the setting forth of Christ's substitution, than is to be found in that golden chapter of Isaiah liii.

In this chapter, as in a holy armoury, we may find, had I time to go through it, many pointed daggers, and two-edged swords, and shields of brass, to arm us against the corrupt notions and opinions of the blinded and deluded Socinians, who fight with all their might against the doctrine of Christ's substitution. Ver. 4, 'Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows,' &c.; ver. 5, 'The chastisement of our peace was upon him, and with his stripes we are healed;' ver. 6, 'The Lord hath laid on him the iniquities of us all;' or, 'the Lord hath made the iniquity of us all to meet on him;' ver. 7, 'He was oppressed and he was afflicted,' &c.; or, as the words are rendered by some, 'It was exacted and he answered;' ver. 8, 'For the transgression of my people he was stricken;' ver. 11, 'For he shall bear their iniquities;' ver. 12, 'And he bare the sin of many.' All men of worth and weight conclude that all this is spoken of the Lord Jesus Christ. Now what more clear and evident proofs can there be of Christ's susception, of the sinner's guilt, and of his bearing the punishment due for it? The priests of old, you know, are said to bear the iniquity of the people: Lev. x. 17, 'God hath given it you to bear the iniquity of the congregation, to make atonement for them before the Lord.' The sinner bears his iniquity subjectively, the priest typically, and the Lord Christ really: Exod. xxviii. 38, 'That Aaron may bear the iniquity of the holy things.' Herein the high priest was a type of Christ; answerable to which the prophet Isaiah tells us that Christ, our high priest, had the iniquities of all believers laid upon him, and that he bare them in his own person, Heb. iv. 14, 15; so the apostle, Heb. ix. 28, 'So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many,' &c., ἀνεγκέιν ἁμαρτίας. It is an allusion to the priests who carried up the sacrifice, and with it the sins of the people, to the altar. Christ our priest did carry up the sins of his people upon the cross, and there made satisfaction for them, in their room or stead, by the sacrifice of himself; and that scripture is more worth than the Indies—viz., 1 Pet. ii. 24, 'Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree,' ἀνήνεγκεν, 'he bare them aloft'—viz., when he climbed up his cross, and nailed them thereunto, Col. ii. 13–15. Christ in the human nature, when he was upon the cross, did suffer all the punishments and torments that were due to our sins; he cancelled all bonds, annihilated the curse; in which respects he is said 'to bear our sins in his own body on the tree.' But to prevent prolixity I shall produce no more scriptures, though many more might have been produced, to prove Christ a common person, a representative head of all his elect; and that he did really substitute himself in their room, and took upon himself their guilt, and put himself in their place, and did undergo whatever they should have undergone.

Now from all these considerations, a child of God may form up this sixth plea as to the ten scriptures in the margin,¹ that refer to the great day of account, or to a man's particular account. *O blessed God, Jesus Christ was a common person, a representative head: I am to be considered in him, who is my surety, and therefore he is bound to pay all my debts: and as he is a common person and stood in my*

¹ Eccles. xi. 9, and xii. 14; Mat. xii. 14, and xviii. 23; Luke xvi. 3; Rom. iv. 10; 2 Cor. v. 10; Heb. ix. 27, and xii. 17, and 1 Pet. iv. 5.

stead, so the satisfaction that is made unto thy justice by him, is in law to be accounted mine, as really as if my attorney should pay a debt for me: and therefore, I must rest satisfied that the debt is paid, and in law shall never be exacted of me; though it was not paid by myself in person, but by another who did personate me in that act, and did it for me and in my behalf. Christ was a common person, personating as a second Adam, the first Adam and all his posterity; offering the same nature for sin, which fell by sin from the pattern of perfection, God himself. 'By man came death, and by man came the resurrection from the dead,' 1 Cor. xv. 21; man for man, person for person, nature for nature, and name for name. There are two roots out of which life and death springs. (1.) As all that die receive their death-wounds by the disobedience of the first Adam; so all that live receive life from the obedience of the second Adam. (2.) As all die who are the sons of the first Adam by natural generation; so all live, who are the sons of the second Adam through spiritual regeneration. O holy and blessed God, thou hast set up Jesus Christ as a common person, as the representative head of all thy elect, and I am to be considered in that common head; and all that he has done as my head, and in my stead and room, is to be reckoned to me, as if I had done it in my own person, and by this plea I will stand, rejoice, and triumph. Upon this God accepts of the plea, as sound and good, and saith to him that pleads it, 'enter thou into the joy of thy Lord,' Mat. xxv. 21.

VII. The seventh plea that a believer may form up, as to the ten scriptures formerly cited, that refer to the great day of account, or to a man's particular account, may be drawn from the consideration of Christ's suretyship. Christ is called a surety: Heb. vii. 22, 'By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.' The Greek word *ἑγγυος*, *sponsor*, *fidejussor*, *prætor*, a surety, a pledger, is very significative, being derived, as some think, from *χειρὸν*, an hand, as it were *ἐν χειρὶ*, in hands, because the security or pledge is given in hand.¹ A surety is properly one that willingly promiseth and undertakes to pay and discharge the debt, if the debtor fail, and be not able to make satisfaction himself. Thus Paul willingly and spontaneously, from the love he had to his new convert Onesimus, promised and undertook to make satisfaction to Philemon, for any wrong that Onesimus had done him: Philem. 18, 19, 'If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put it upon mine account; I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it,' *i.e.*, account Onesimus his debt to Paul, and Paul's satisfaction or payment to Onesimus; which answers the double imputation in point of justification, that is, of our sins or debts to Christ, and of Christ's satisfaction to us. Consider Christ as a surety, and so he hath fully paid all our debts, and set us perfectly free for ever. A surety is one that enters into bond, and engages himself for the debt of another; and so Christ is become our surety. Therefore he was bound by our bond, and engageth himself for the

¹ Our English translation hath it, 'Of a better testament,' but not so fitly, because properly, a testament, neither useth nor needeth to have a surety, as a covenant doth. Beza therefore justly blameth both Erasmus and the Vulgar translation, for rendering it 'testament;' for that a surety is not added in testaments; and it should be added, how can the same be both a testator and a surety? So that this word 'surety,' hath reference properly to a covenant, and not to a testament.

debt of another. For our debt he was made under the law, and so as a sacrifice, he stood in the stead of a sinner, and the sacrifice was to be offered for the man; and so some expound that place, 'He was made sin for us,' 2 Cor. v. 21, that is, a sin-offering; therefore he doth take our sins upon him as his own, Isa. liii. ; and so the Lord doth impute them and lay them upon him as his own: ver. 6, 'He did make to meet upon him the iniquities of us all.' The original word here used comes from פגאג pagang, which word in its native propriety intends a kind of force or violence, *impetum fecit*, they met with all their violence upon him, and therefore 'he was made sin for us,' that is, as a surety in our stead, 'he did bear our sins in his body upon the tree; he was delivered for our transgressions.' Our surety hath paid all our debts. 'The chastisement of our peace was upon him, and it pleased the Father to bruise him,' Isa. liii. 5, 10. The original word signifies to break him to pieces as in a mortar. By the great things that our surety has done for us, and the great things that he hath suffered for us, he hath given most perfect and complete satisfaction both to his Father's law, and to his Father's justice; and this pleased the Father. Weigh well that, Col. ii. 14, 'He blotted out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, that was contrary unto us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross.'¹ Christ hath crossed out the black lines of our sin with the red lines of his own blood. The Greek word χειρόγραφον, *i.e.*, the handwriting, some do take here for a writing written with God's own hand in tables of stone, as the law of the ten commandments were, Exod. xxxiv. 1; and this is by them understood of the moral law, or of the ten commandments, which are said to be against us, in respect of their strict requiring of perfect obedience, or in default thereof, by reason of its curse, which Christ as our surety hath borne for us on the cross, and delivered us from it, Gal. iii. 10, 13. But others by this handwriting do understand the law of the ceremonies of the Old Testament. In the general, it was something that God had against us; to shew or convince, or prove, that we had sinned against him, and were his debtors. I suppose that this handwriting was principally the moral law, obliging us unto perfect obedience, and condemning us for the defect of the same, and likewise those ceremonial rites, which, as Beza observes, were a kind of public confession of our debts. Now these were against, and contrary unto us, inasmuch as they did argue us guilty of sin and condemnation, which the moral law threatened and sentenced, &c., but saith the apostle, 'Christ hath blotted out the handwriting, and hath taken it out of the way and nailed it to his cross,' that is, Jesus Christ hath not only abrogated the ceremonial law, but also the damnable power of the moral law, as our surety, by performing an act of obedience which the law did require, and by undergoing the punishment which the law did exact from the transgressors of it; and so Christ doing and suffering, what we were bound to do and to suffer, he did thereby blot out the handwriting, and cancelled it; and therefore we may safely con-

¹ Some by the handwriting do understand the covenant of God with Adam. Beza and Calvin do understand it of the ceremonial law. But, saith Chrysostom, 'It is meant not only of the ceremonial law, but also of the moral law, as a covenant of works.' Ecumenius, Jerome, and others, are of the same opinion. But, saith Zanchy, 'This is spoken to comfort the Colossians, who were never under the ceremonial law.'

clude, that the creditor is fully satisfied, when he gives in his bond to be cancelled. There are two ways of cancelling a bond, *laceratione et liturâ*. Here it is blotted out, and can be read no more than if it had never been; the obligatory power of the law as a covenant is taken away. God delivered his people from Pharaoh by force, and from Babylon by favour; but that deliverance that Christ, as our surety, hands out to us, from sin, from wrath, from hell, from the curse, and from the moral law as it is a covenant of works, is obtained *justo pretio soluto*, by paying a full price; by which one becomes satisfied, and another thereupon delivered: Heb. ix. 26, 'He hath appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself;' to put away sin, Dan. ix. 24, is to abolish or make void the guilt or obligation of sin, whereby it binds over unbelievers to condemnation; to put away sin is to abrogate it, it is to bind it up in a bundle, to seal it up in a bag, to cast it behind him, as cancelled obligations, Isa. xxxviii. 17; Micah vii. 19; it is to blot out the black handwriting with the red lines of his blood drawn over it; so that sin has no force, no power to accuse or condemn, or shut such poor souls out of heaven, who have that Jesus for their surety, that made himself a sacrifice to put away sin. Christ as our surety laid down a satisfactory price, not only for our good, but also in our stead or room: 1 Pet. iii. 18, 'Christ also hath suffered for sin, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God.' What the unjust sinner should have suffered, that the just Christ suffered for him: 1 Cor. v. 21, 'He was made sin for us;' that is, an offering, a sacrifice in our stead, for the expiation of our sins: 'Christ was made a curse for us,' Gal. iii. 13. Now Christ's becoming a curse for us stands in this, that whereas we are all accursed by the sentence of the law because of sin, he now comes into our room, and stands under the stroke of that curse which of right belongs to us; so that it lies not now any longer on the backs of poor sinners, but on him for them and in their stead; therefore he is called a surety, Heb. vii. 22. The surety stands in the room of a debtor, malefactor, or him that is any way obnoxious to the law. Such is Adam and all his posterity. We are, by the doom of the law, evil-doers, transgressors; and upon that score we stand indebted to the justice of God, and lie under the stroke of his wrath. Now the Lord Jesus Christ seeing us in this condition, he steps in and stands between us and the blow; yea, he takes this wrath and curse off from us unto himself; he stands not only or merely after the manner of a surety among men in the case of debt, for here the surety enters bond with the principal for the payment of the debt, but yet expects that the debtor should not put him to it, but that he should discharge the debt himself, he only stands as a good security for the debtor: no, Christ Jesus doth not expect that we should pay the debt ourselves, but he takes it wholly upon himself. As a surety for a murderer or traitor, or some other notorious malefactor that hath broken prison and is run away, he lies by it body for body, state for state, and undergoes whatsoever the malefactor is chargeable withal for satisfying the law; even so the Lord Jesus stands surety for us runaway malefactors, making himself liable to all that curse that belongs to us, that he might both answer the law fully, and bring us back again to God. As the first Adam stood in the room of all mankind fallen, so Christ, the second

Adam, stands in the room of all mankind that are to be restored; he sustains the person of all those which do spiritually descend from him, and unto whom he bears the relation of a head. When God appointed his dearest Son to be a surety for us, and charged all our debts upon him, and required an exact satisfaction to his law and justice, inso-much that he would not abate the Son of his love one farthing-token of the debt, he did demonstrate a greater love to justice than if he had damned as many worlds as there are men in the world. Oh, let us never cast an eye upon Christ's suretyship, but let us stand and wonder, yea, let us be swallowed up in a deep admiration of Christ's love, and of his Father's impartial justice! Ah, what transcendent wisdom also does here appear in reconciling the riches of mercy and infinite justice both in one by the means of a surety! If all the angels in heaven, and all the men on earth, had been put to answer these questions, How shall sin be pardoned? How shall the sinner be reconciled and saved? How shall the wrath of God be pacified? How shall the justice of God be satisfied? How shall the redemption of man be brought about, in such a way whereby God may be most eminently glorified? they could never have answered the questions. But God, in his infinite wisdom, hath found out a way to save sinners, not only in a way of mercy and grace, but in a way of justice and righteousness: and all this by the means of Christ's suretyship, as hath been already declared.

Now, from the consideration of Christ's suretyship, a believer may form up this seventh, safe, comfortable, and blessed plea as to the ten scriptures formerly cited, that refer to the great day of account, or to a man's particular account: *O blessed Father, remember that thine own Son was my ransom, his blood was the price; he was my surety, and undertook to answer for my sins. I know, O blessed God, that thou must be satisfied, but remember my surety hath satisfied thee; not for himself, for he was holy and harmless, a lamb without a spot; but for me. They were my debts he satisfied for; and look over thy books, and thou shalt find that he hath cleared all accounts and reckonings between thee and me.*¹ *The guilt of all my sins have been imputed to my surety, who did present himself in my stead, to make full payment and satisfaction to thy justice.* As Paul said to Philemon, ver. 18, concerning his servant Onesimus, 'If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee anything, put it upon my account,' so saith Christ to the penitent and believing soul, If thou hast any guilt, any debt to be answered for unto God, put them all upon my account. If thou hast wronged my Father, I will make satisfaction to the uttermost: for I was made sin for thee, Isa. liii. 12; 2 Cor. v. 21. I poured out my soul for thy transgressions. It cost me my heart's blood to reconcile thee to my Father, and to slay all enmity, Acts xx. 28. And as Rebekah said to Jacob in another case, 'Upon me, my son, be the curse,' Gen. xxvii. 13, so saith Christ to the believing soul, Why, thy sins did expose thee unto the curse of the law, but I was made a curse for thee, Gal. iii. 13. I did bear that burden myself upon the cross, and upon my shoulders were all thy griefs and sorrows borne; I was wounded

¹ When a man marries a woman, with her person he takes her debts and satisfaction too; so does Christ when he takes us to be his, he takes our sins also to be his.

for thy transgressions, and I was bruised for thy iniquities, Isa. liii. 4-8, 10; and therefore we are said to have 'redemption and remission of sins in his blood,' Eph. i. 7. O blessed God! thou knowest that a surety doth not pay the debt only for the debtor's good, but as standing in the debtor's stead, and so his payment is reckoned to the debtor. And thus the case stands between Christ and my soul; for, as my surety, he hath paid all my debts, and that very payment that he hath made, in honour and justice, thou art obliged to accept of as made in my stead. O dearest Father! that Jesus, who is God-man, as my surety, he hath done all that the law requireth of me, and thereby he hath freed me from wrath to come, and from the curse that was due to me for my sins, 1 Thes. i. 10. This is my plea, O holy God, and by this plea I shall stand. Hereupon God declares, This plea I accept as just and good, and therefore 'enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.'

Christian reader, I have gone as far in the opening and clearing up of those grand points of the gospel that have fallen under our consideration as I judge meet at this time. By the title-page thou mayest safely conclude, that I have promised much more than in this treatise I have performed; but be but a little patient, and by divine assistance, I shall make sure and full payment. The covenant of grace, and the covenant of redemption, with some other points of high importance, I shall present to thee in the second part, which will be the last part. In this first part I don't offer thee that which cost me nothing. I desire that all the interest thou hast in heaven may be so fully and duly improved, that this first part may be so blest from on high, as that saints and sinners may have cause to bless God to all eternity, for what is brought to hand; and beg hard, that the other part, which is drawn up and fitted for the press, may also be crowned with many blessings. Hereby thou wilt put a high obligation upon the author, to do all he can, to be yet a little further serviceable to thy soul and others', to thy salvation and others', before he goes hence and shall be seen no more.¹

¹ Appended here is a list of Errata, all of which have been carefully attended to—The note may be given:—'There are sundry other mistakes in pointings, changes, and transpositions of letters, misfiguring of pages, &c., besides. Some are omitted, because they do not much disturb the sense, others because they will not easily escape thy notice. Share the faults between the author's absence and the printer's negligence: and then correct before thou readest.'—We have endeavoured to make all the 'corrections' thus generally indicated.—G.